

GOD'S PUZZLE SOLVED

BY

ART MOKAROW

God's Puzzle Solved

Evanow Publishers
P. O. Box 1197
Montgomery, TX 77356

Copyright Txu 1 – 167 – 465

Third Printing

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in the United States of America.

Written by Art Mokarow

PREFACE

God, The Father, and His Son, Jesus, want you to keep growing Spiritually – all your life. To do so, you need to spend much time in prayer and Bible study. Prayer is your vehicle to talk to God and let Him know your needs and wishes. Reading and studying The Bible is how God speaks to you about His Holy Word. From The Bible, God reveals to you who He is, what His Purpose is, and what He wants you to do. The Bible is written as a mystery or a puzzle (Matthew 13:10-11). God states those who seek Him diligently will understand The Mystery of His Kingdom opened to their understanding. God will, little by little, open your mind to greater understanding.

Albert Einstein once said, “I want to know God’s thoughts....the rest are details.”

This book’s only purpose is to piece together the major parts of this puzzle, so in your personal Bible study; your spiritual understanding will be increased. Ultimately, a complete story from Genesis to Revelation will become apparent. You will understand the great love Almighty God and His Son, Jesus have for you. The contents of this book are strictly as The Bible reveals; no consideration has been given to any church groups, denominations, sects or ideologies, and has no attachment to any religious group. The contents have been totally written as revealed from God’s Word. The Apostle Paul states that the most any of us can know of God’s TRUTH is only in part (I Corinthians 13:9). No person or group has all The Truth. Since this is so, your comments, questions and criticisms are welcomed. Jesus said, very plainly, The Gospel must be free.

We ask that no remuneration or monies be sent.

Art Mokarow

Any Biblical questions can be e-mailed or sent by mail.

Mailing Address: P.O. Box 1197

Montgomery, TX 77356

E: mail: art@themerchantnet.com

Website: www.godspuzzlesolved.com

Book 1: God's Puzzled Solved

Book 2: God's Work

Biblical Articles you may wish to request:

What is Sin?

God's Requirement for Salvation

What is The Theme of The Holy Bible?

The Mind of Christ

The Schoolmaster

Mark of The Beast

The Mystery Harvests

Who is The Beast with Seven Crowns?

Babylon and The Two Holy Grails

Is God's Church The Bride of Christ?

All Books, articles can be downloaded FREE OF CHARGE from the Website.

GOD'S PUZZLE SOLVED

CONTENTS

	Preface	iv
1	Is God Real? (God – the only logical answer for the universe)	1
2	God's Puzzle (Bible purposely written as a puzzle)	41
3	Who is God? (God's essence and what He looks like)	73
4	God's Character and Personality (God's nature and His powers)	112
5	God's Library (God's plan rewritten in His mind)	146
6	God's Mind Revealed (Bible story from Genesis to Revelation)	181
7	The True Gospel (Goodness of God's Spiritual Kingdom)	231
8	Marriage, The Great Mystery (Bible is all about a marriage)	290
9	The Covenants (God writes His Law in our hearts & minds)	340
10	What Was Added to The Law (Administration of Moses)	390
11	The <u>Spirit</u> Vs. The Letter (God writes His Law in our hearts)	405
12	Satan – God's Helper (God uses Satan in His Plan)	428
13	God's Eternal Fire (The Purpose of The Lake of Fire)	461
14	God's Kingdom (The love and beauty of God's Spiritual Kingdom)	507
	From our Readers	554

CHAPTER 1

IS GOD REAL?

Since The Garden of Eden, mankind has approached Life as a bewildering puzzle. Creation itself stands before you as the grandest of conundrums. What started Life? Who started it? Why was it started? Why are humans here?

In the search for the answers to life's questions, whole sciences have evolved to explain it all. Most recently, scientists have given birth to The Theory of Everything. But how close are you to really knowing the correct answers to the most profound questions about Life itself?

Many religions, philosophies, and sciences have struggled with these issues. The mystery surrounding the truth is more complex than any cleric, philosopher, scientist or scholar—even all of mankind collectively—could possibly imagine.

In this search for a reasonable, rational view of the creation and the explanation of life, you must look at the various possibilities. When you implement simple detective work, coupled with common sense in studying The Scriptures, you will know the only true answers to these questions.

Down through the ages, mankind has shown an abundance of evidence

that confirms one cannot find the answers to life's great puzzle. God, Himself, is the only One who has these answers. Within the pages of The Bible you will find an outline of His Plan, which answers life's puzzling questions.

SEARCHING FOR ANSWERS

When you begin the search for answers, it all appears as an impossible puzzle. Yet, the pieces of this puzzle can be put together if you know where to begin. If this Bible—this outline—is followed carefully, an account of the great, unconditional Love Story between God and His Creation will be discovered.

God's Puzzle Solved reveals the most exceptional and incomparable Love Story ever imagined. God's love will explain all of life's puzzling questions. You will know who started it, what started it, and why it was started in the first place. Finally, you will have the answer about why you have been placed here on this planet.

To understand God, and the love He has for all His Creation, is truly beyond one's human comprehension. No human words are adequate, or ever will be sufficient, to fully explain the marvelous Plan your Father in Heaven has for all His children.

What you will find is that your Father has given you all the means to understand. True science, physics and mathematics have solved the complex "equation" called Life.

JOB BEGINS TO LEARN HOW IT ALL STARTED

The Bible is “mankind’s instruction book.” It will show you how to research these age-old questions so that you can find the real answers. The Book of Job is one of the oldest books in The Bible. It is estimated to have been written from 2,500 to 4,000 years ago. In Job 38, you read of Job’s problems and sufferings.

Job’s three friends added to his misery by recounting and defining more of his problems. None of them actually came up with the real answer about why Job was having problems. To appreciate the real questions, God said to Job directly:

Job 38:3-7 ³Gird up now thy loins like a man; for I will demand of thee, and answer thou me. ⁴Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? Declare, if thou hast understanding. ⁵Who hath laid the measures thereof, if thou knowest? Or who hath stretched the line upon it? ⁶Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened? Or who laid the corner stone thereof; ⁷When the morning stars sang together and all the sons of God shouted for joy?

God talks to Job: “³Gird up now thy loins like a man.” Paraphrasing, He asks if Job believes that he knows the answer to everything? He wants to know if Job knew who created all things and understands the Purpose of

Life? God is calling Job to account. He asks, **“⁴Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth?”**

FOUNDATION OF THE EARTH

How would you answer these questions if you were Job? “Who made the foundation of the earth? What was it laid upon?” God is asking very significant—very important—questions of Job. Where was Job when all this happened? Where were you? **“⁵Who hath laid the measures thereof, if thou knowest? Or who had stretched the line upon it?”**

God spoke in terms that Job would understand. Job would have known how to construct a building—first surveying the site, laying the foundation, and then beginning to erect the structure. But could Job even begin to measure the earth, the solar system, and the universe? Hardly!

It has been only in the last few centuries that astronomers and astrophysicists have made accurate measurements of the earth, the solar system, and the galaxies. With high-tech instruments like the Hubble Space Telescope and advanced mathematics, scientists are now attempting to measure the vast distances and complex parameters of the universe. This would be compared to “stretching the line” upon it, as it were.

So the questions that God asked Job aren't ludicrous after all. He is asking, “Where were you **“⁷when the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?”**” It took thousands of years for science to begin to understand the forces that actually hold up the earth.

Job did not have the tools of modern scientists in order to scientifically answer God's penetrating questions.

A STATE OF MIND

To prove that God exists, one must understand something about man's human reasoning. Mankind can always come up with an excuse to explain his own thoughts and personal opinions. When you hear the simple explanations offered by The Bible, you can only come to one conclusion: that no one was there in "the beginning." Job wasn't there, and neither were you. Only God was there – and He reveals the answers in His Word.

Proverbs 8:1-2 ¹Doth not wisdom cry? and understanding put forth her voice? ²She standeth in the top of high places, by the way in the places of the paths.

In Proverbs, God reveals the process of creation to you. This is the chapter about wisdom, and the personification of wisdom. Some say that "wisdom" refers to Christ, while others say it applies to God. Whether Solomon is talking about Jesus Christ or God doesn't matter – because the subject here is "wisdom."

What is wisdom? **"¹Doth not wisdom cry? and understanding put forth her voice?"** The Hebrew word for "wisdom" is "hokmah." It can, also, be translated as "intelligent skill." The person who has wisdom possesses skill in intelligence. It means the person is smart or wise. **"²She"** (meaning wisdom) **"standeth in the top of high places, by the**

way in the places of the paths.”

In other words, in the development of intelligent skills, common sense (logic) can be found all around you. From the beginning, God gave humanity free choice to follow Him – or to ignore Him.

When Adam and Eve were in The Garden of Eden, and ate of The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil, it was because they wanted to decide, immediately, for themselves what was right – and what was wrong. They could have chosen The Tree of Life, which would have revealed to them immediately what, was right. Instead, Adam and Eve wanted to be independent, and to decide everything for themselves.

THE SCIENTIFIC METHOD

Consider the first loaves of bread ever made. Have you wondered if they tasted good? How many loaves of bread had to be made before the recipe was really good enough so that the loaves could be eaten? No doubt it was a process that required some trial and error.

This is truly the basis for the process of The Scientific Method, which is the study by observation, guesswork, and by trial and error. All this is done to see what is true, logical, and what makes sense. That is the exact process that humanity has chosen from the time of Adam and Eve. It is just that simple. God allows you to decide everything for yourself. Ironically, there is a hunger to want to know why things work a certain way. And so man has always explored the unknown.

Proverbs 8:3-5 ³She crieth at the gates, at the entry of

the city, at the coming in at the doors. ⁴Unto you, O men, I call; and my voice is to the sons of man. ⁵O ye simple, understand wisdom: and, ye fools, be ye of an understanding heart.

God asked Job to stand up like a man – and then tell God where Job was when God laid the foundation of the earth. “⁵**Oh ye simple, understand wisdom and ye fools, be ye of an understanding heart.**” The problem is the heart. The heart is the term used by The Bible to define the organ of emotional motivation. With your heart, you feel everything emotionally.

In general, mankind doesn't want to find how simple it is to prove that God exists. Most people make decisions based on the emotions of their hearts, rather than with the logic of their minds. This is what Adam and Eve did. Make sure that you have a heart that is motivated by common sense, i.e., a heart that has logic to it – or an understanding heart.

A MATTER OF FAITH

It is often said that to know God is a matter of faith. However, it takes more faith to believe in science than it does to believe in God. You must have more faith to believe in evolution than you do to believe in God.

Proverbs 8:6-7 ⁶Hear; for I will speak of excellent things; and the opening of my lips shall be right things. ⁷For my mouth shall speak truth; and wickedness is an abomination to my lips.

“Hear, for I will speak of excellent things.” (God speaking to you.)
“And the opening of my lips shall be right things.” Some people put mystical meanings to religious words for their own purposes. Instead of taking The Words in The Bible for the basic, simple, reality they express, it is common for critics to explain them as having a vague, obscure meaning. Either that, or else these words are made to fit into some mystical belief or religious system.

DESTRUCTIVE RELIGION

Clearly, religion can be used for destructive purposes. God's messages can become twisted, obfuscated, and variously interpreted to fit anyone's agenda – for good or evil. But God tells you that when He opens His lips, He will disclose very excellent things. He will tell you what is right and good. His mouth only speaks Truth. **“⁷For my mouth shall speak truth; and wickedness is an abomination to my lips.”** God declares that He is telling you ONLY what is right and true.

Proverbs 8:22-23 ²²The LORD possessed me in the beginning of his way, before his works of old. ²³I was set up from everlasting, from the beginning, or ever the earth was.

Where can you get wisdom and understanding? Who is going to tell you the real Truth – as well as the right way to think? **“²²The Lord possessed me in the beginning of his way, before his works of old.”**

God, through Solomon, is talking about wisdom, and how wisdom existed

long before the creation of the universe. Intellectual skill existed before the universe. **“²³I was set up from everlasting.”** The word “everlasting” in the Hebrew language is “olam,” i.e., “eon” or “age.”

HOW LONG IS FOREVER?

When God tells you that something is “forever,” then it actually means “age lasting.” There are many different age-lasting periods. Some call it a “Dispensation,” as in “Noachian Dispensation” – or “The Dispensation of Grace.” A “dispensation” is an age-lasting period during which God is accomplishing His Purposes for mankind. So, God is telling you that through all the different ages, there is “no time” for Him.

Malachi 3:6 For I am the Lord, I change not; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed.

God says, **“⁶I change not.”** If God never changes – and never had “a beginning” and will never have “an end” – then time means nothing to God. He is telling you about age-lasting events that do happen, as in the beginning of the universe.

God continues to tell you in Proverbs 8:23, that: **“I was set up (speaking of wisdom) from everlasting, from the beginning, or ever the earth was.”** So, this is going back to the creation of all things. You can know how it all happened.

SEEKING WISDOM

Everyone must seek wisdom. To get wisdom, an individual must seek understanding (Truth) along with knowledge. The Hebrew word “Yadá” translates into the English to mean “knowledge” or “certainly certain.”

When the word “knowledge” is used in The Bible, it is talking about “facts.” It means “Truth.” There are no “ifs”, “ands” or “buts.” Rather, it is “certainly certain.” That is True knowledge -- no theories, no conjecture, just that which is “certainly certain.”

Romans 1:16-19 ¹⁶For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek. ¹⁷For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith. ¹⁸For the wrath of God is revealed from Heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; ¹⁹Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them.

In Romans, God talks about the beginning of Creation. Paul writes about the actual process of Creation itself – how it all came about, and the reason for it. He makes clear that humanity is without excuse when asking whether there is a God – and whether God created everything.

TWO GROUPS

God separates people into Two Groups. The First Group is pliable and willing to understand, but the Second Group, purposely, doesn't want to understand The Truth. They couldn't care less how or why the universe was made.

The Truth of God is revealed from faith to increased faith. In other words, you believe God, and listen to and hear Him through His Word. Only then do you start to understand and grow in wisdom. It takes Faith in the beginning. As God reveals Himself and His Power, a greater sense and clarity is soon revealed.

“¹⁷As it is written, the just shall live by faith.” Here is the First Group of human beings, who by “faith,” have decided to believe God and, also, believe the message of The Gospel, by living from faith-to-faith. By doing so, they experience an understanding of The Power of God. **“¹⁸For the wrath of God is revealed from Heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness.”**

The Second Group of people define The Atheists and Agnostics who are those who do not believe. Atheists refuse to believe and The Agnostics don't know what to believe.

Scientists are divided. Some, who believe in God, have discovered that the laws of science help reveal The True Living God. Others believe the universe started by accident, and with no intelligent First Cause – God.

CREATION VS. NON-CREATION

“¹⁸For the wrath of God is revealed from Heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men.” Those, who do not believe in God, are considered to be the ungodly or unrighteous. Unrighteousness means that you are wrong. Of course, this will be seen as an opinion from those who believe in God as Creator.

The primary trouble concerns those whose opinions (after seeking proof) are right, while the rest whose opinions (without seeking proof) are wrong. You must recognize the truth of the text stating: **“¹⁹Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them.”** So, be sure to comprehend the point God is telling you through The Apostle Paul. God can be known!

Indeed, you can prove that God exists. The Greek word for “manifest” is “phaneros” – which means “utterly obvious.” He said, **“¹⁹For God has shewed it unto them.”** This is a reference to The Two Groups of People. One Group, IN FAITH, believes in God. They believe that God being The First Cause or The Beginner of Everything is The One who made all things. This Group believes by faith. As they believe and continue to learn this knowledge, little by little, the true concept becomes clearer.

The Second Group chooses to exercise their pre-conceived ideas. God allows them to believe a lie as a result of their personal opinions. All humanity fits into one of those Two Groups. God allows everyone to choose – to fit in with Him – or without Him. Either way, God is with you, and ultimately you find that everyone will come to The Truth.

HOW GOD REVEALS HIMSELF

Romans 1:20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse.

What maintains the universe? There are invisible forces that uphold everything in the physical universe. Look at some of those forces and how they reveal God. ^{“20}**For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen”** (i.e., physically seen or perceived).

God tells you where you must look to know Him and His Power. God tells you that **the things that are made** reveal Him and His Power. The words translated “the things that are made” are, in the Greek, “ho poiema,” which means “the creation,” “work” or “activity.” Everything that God has created that can be seen, perceived, or detected – whether observable or hidden – reveal Him.

THE INVISIBLE THINGS

This is revealed to whom? It is revealed to all mankind! God leaves mankind all of the clues – by means of all **things that are made**. There will always be someone who will ask, “If there is a God, why doesn’t He show Himself?” Actually, God does reveal Himself: ^{“20}**For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood.”**

God discloses in the texts that there were visible and invisible things when the universe was made. The fundamental particles and forces of nature, which were **from the creation of the world**, reveal God, His Power, and His Divinity. Science calls this: Particle Physics.

Gaze upward into the heavenly expanse. Behold the ocean of stars that are cast into the firmament. These are stars that appear like little diamonds. Witness the spectrum of spectacular colors as the billowy clouds roll by just prior to the sun setting behind the horizon. When you see all these wondrous sights in this universe unfolding before your very eyes, there can be no doubt that there is a God who created it all.

Still, as over-powering and beautiful as the night sky is, the proofs of God are the invisible fundamental forces in the universe. You can prove the invisible things of God: ^{“20}**even His eternal power and Godhead... by the things that are made, so that they are without excuse.**” The Essence of God is His Invisible Power. For the moment, eliminate religious mysticism and the personal opinions of men. Accept God's Word for what it says.

FOUR FUNDAMENTAL FORCES

There are **four fundamental forces** in the world that are invisible – but whose effects are visible. These forces interact between the various sub-atomic particles. They determine the large-scale behavior of matter throughout the universe.

The first force is **Gravity**. Newton's Law of Gravitation states that every particle in the universe attracts every other particle in the universe with a force proportional to the mass of the particles and inversely proportional to the square of the distance between them (see formula in box).

$$F = G \frac{m_1 m_2}{r^2}$$

where:

F = force due to gravity

G = $6.672 \times 10^{-11} \text{ m}^3 \text{ kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-2}$

(the Universal Gravitational Constant)

m1, m2 = mass

r = distance between masses

The more mass that something has, the more gravitational pull that is exerted. However, gravity is the weakest of the four forces. It diminishes exponentially with the square of the distance – and extends to infinity. Have you ever seen gravity? No one has because gravity is invisible. But no one can deny its existence – as you can feel it, experience it, and see its affects. When you jump in the air, there is a force that pulls you down. It is invisible, but it is undeniably there doing its specially designated job.

The second type of invisible force is **Electromagnetism**, which can be explained as waves, e.g., radio and TV signals. Are these waves visible? Can you see them? If so, where are they? Are they invisible? Electromagnetic forces include gamma rays, ultra-violet rays, x-rays, and so forth.

WHAT IS LIGHT?

One of the most amazing forces is light. Light can be very bright, but you don't actually see the light waves themselves. Electric lamps light a room

or an object. You can pass your hand through the light, but you can't feel the light itself.

When you grab some light waves, you have captured nothing. You can't grab light waves. Electricity going through a light bulb heats the filament and diffuses the light on to the table – or throughout the room. Nonetheless, the forces at work are all invisible.

Science has found that light has waves – just as the ocean has waves. The more waves per unit, the greater the frequency, which means more **light energy**. Interestingly, we find that: “**God is light**” (I John 1:5), and the word for “light” in the Greek is “phos” – from which you get the word “photon.” Photons transmit light energy. That is what light is: the invisible electromagnetic force.

$$E = h \times f$$

where:
 E = energy
 $h = 6.626 \times 10^{-34} \text{ J s}$
 (Planck's Constant)
 f = frequency

The third invisible force is the **Strong Nuclear Force**. This force acts within the nucleus of atoms in order to hold together the protons and neutrons. It is the strongest of the four forces. It diminishes exponentially with distance to the seventh power, and extends to infinity.

$$E = mc^2$$

where:
 E = energy
 m = mass
 c = the speed of light

Einstein developed a formula based on this third invisible force. His famous equation equates mass and energy (see formula). Mass is anything that occupies space and has weight, such as the earth, a rock, or a tiny piece of dust.

The sum of the masses of the atoms of an object multiplied by the speed of light squared equals ENERGY! Light travels at 186,300 miles per second. If you take an object, like a rock, or even the earth itself, and multiply its mass by the speed of light squared, you get energy. Indeed, this is an incredible amount of energy. This equation is the foundation of nuclear weapons. And yet, these subatomic forces are invisible as well.

POWER IN A PINT

A pint of water converted into energy would yield the equivalent of enough energy to supply the United States with electricity for twelve days. On this basis, one fifty-gallon barrel of water could provide the U.S. with enough electricity to last for ten years! This goes to show the enormous amount of power potential when matter is reduced to pure energy.

The fourth invisible force is the **Weak Nuclear Force**. This force, like the Strong Nuclear Force, also operates within the nucleus of atoms. It governs the process of radioactive decay. The sun's thermonuclear reactions would not function without it. The Weak Nuclear Force is necessary for the buildup of heavy nuclei.

God told you about all this in The Book of Romans. This concerns **these forces** -- invisible forces -- that you can discover in the **material universe disclose My power**. All forces -- visible and invisible -- come from God, and reveal Him by the very powers they contain.

Romans 1:21-23 ²¹**Because that, when they knew God,**

they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. ²²Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools. ²³And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things.

Ironically, there was a time in the beginning when God (through an angel) was in Eden. This was when everyone, including Adam, Eve, Abel and Cain, all knew God in a very personal manner (after Able was slain by Cain, God had to be sought until the time of Noah). In Romans, you read: **“²¹Because that, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations....”**

They didn't use wisdom. They didn't stick to understanding, or to true knowledge and facts: **“...and their foolish heart was darkened. ²²Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools.”** God identifies an evolutionist who doesn't believe in Him – a “fool.” **“²³And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God...”** What was The Glory? The Glory was from these invisible forces that manifested God's power to be what He is.

EXCHANGED GLORY

Then they changed Him from a glorious, incorruptible God into an object. The God who is omniscient, omnipotent, all knowing, and all-powerful – a God with all His capabilities – was about to be reduced by one in His

Creation into “an idol.” They reduced God into an “idol” made of gold, silver, wood, granite, marble, cement, ceramic, or any other convenient material. Is it any wonder that God becomes angry?

Parents can perhaps empathize in a very small degree to the hurt God feels. This is when a child is told a fact – but the child refuses to believe. “Don’t touch the hot stove because it will burn you.” But the child touches it nonetheless. Parents commiserate with the children’s pain as they experience what is a painful experience. God is hurt when you do not believe His Truths. It truly hurts Him.

Matthew 23:37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!

Surely, you can understand why Christ, The Son, is also hurt. When He saw Jerusalem, He brought the above message to His children, Israel. They changed His Father, the incorruptible God, into an image made like unto corruptible man. God, in the eyes of His Creation, had been fashioned into an idol. He was compared to the image of birds, fish, creeping things, and four-footed beasts!

WHY STUDY SCIENCE?

When studying science you can confirm a great deal of Biblical Truth.

But understand that the result of scientific investigation will be wrong if it does not point to God.

Ironically, among scientists there are many major splits and divisive theories. Some say the world is facing a greenhouse effect. Others point to a forthcoming ice age. Some say that humanity has an impact on the greenhouse effect, while others say it is arrogant to think that mankind can significantly alter nature. So some scientists believe in God being The Creator, and then other scientists who don't understand God – will not even acknowledge His Existence.

Instead, they teach everything against God, promoting their evolutionist conclusions in volumes of books that are taught in many of the school systems. What possible chance do students have to learn The Truth about God?

Schools are teaching children the opposite of what God is. It is a big statement to make, but it is one that is universally accepted by believers in God and non-believers as well. That statement is that evolution is not a fact! Evolution, they proudly declare, happens by accident – no intellect, design, or intended law. It is just plain “time and chance” – a pure accident!

GOD DISCLOSES WHAT HE IS

John 4:23-24 ²³But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship

him. ²⁴God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.

Biblically, God tells you about these invisible things that disclose His power. In the account when Jesus Christ was talking to a Samaritan woman about the worship of God, she stated that Samaritans worship God in Mount Gerizim, while the Jews worship God in Jerusalem.

Jesus Christ told this Samaritan woman that “²³**the hour comes and now is when the true worshipers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth, for the Father seeks such to worship him.**” Why? “²⁴**God is a spirit.**”

WHAT IS SPIRIT?

As used in The Old Testament, the word “spirit,” in Hebrew, is “ruak” which means “strong wind.” In The New Testament, the Greek word “pneuma” is used (from which you get the word “pneumatic”). It, too, means wind, but it is infinitely more potent. In the Greek, it translates to “a blast of wind” – something forceful and full of energy. So, “God is energy just like the wind.”

In The Netherlands, the people use many windmills. No one can see the energy from the wind, but you do see the result – just as you see the results of light. It is remarkable that wind has the power to make electricity, to turn on light bulbs, and to run all sorts of equipment and

machinery. Spirit is not some vapor. It is not a smoke-like appearance – but rather it is a force of great energy.

I John 1:1-4 ¹**That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, of the Word of life;** ²**(For the life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and shew unto you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us;)** ³**That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his son Jesus Christ.** ⁴**And these things write we unto you, that your joy may be full.**

There are some amazing facts in The Bible. When dealing with the beginning of creation, “¹**That which was from the beginning** [Speaking of Jesus], **which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes** [John, The Apostle, lived with Christ], **which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, of the Word of life;** ²**For the life was manifested** [Made obvious] **and we have seen it, and bear witness...**”.

HOW TO BE AN APOSTLE

To be an apostle, they had to have seen Christ -- just as Paul had to see Him when he was struck down on the road to Damascus. Consequently, the text goes on with: “...**and shew unto you that eternal life, which was**

with the Father, was manifested unto us; ³That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you...”.

The Apostles are telling you about this Being who was from the beginning, and what He is like. “...**that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.** [Here is why he writes this:] **⁴And these things we write unto you that your joy may be full.”**

When you learn the process of understanding God’s Word, it will fill you with great joy. As you learn The Truth, you will understand that God started it all. He created everything you see and don’t see. He had a specific Purpose in The Way He made everything. It was not an accident. It was the only right way to create it.

THE PERFECT PLAN

Astoundingly, God made perfect His Creation and His Plan in order to reveal Himself to those who choose to know Him. This is for those who want to be part of His Plan.

I John 1:5 This then is the message which we have heard of him and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all.

As you have learned, one of the hidden forces that man has discovered scientifically is the electromagnetic force of light. God is light energy – an invisible force that reveals The Power of God. The energy force of

photons emanate from God. Everything, but everything, comes from God.

“⁵God is light and in him is no darkness at all.”

When mass is dense enough, nothing can escape, including light. This is called a Black Hole. Black Holes possess such gravitational potency that they absorb light completely – and reflect none. When “matter,” even a star, gets sucked into a dense Black Hole, the matter disappears completely – forever. God cannot have any darkness. God is totally Spirit and Light.

In Romans 1, people who in faith believe God, will grow in wisdom, start to have understanding, and can, then, see the facts. They will perceive His Power through the visible and invisible things that exist.

A small group of scientists are now finding this to be true. You have seen that God Himself created these individual forces. You see that “Spirit” is nothing more than wind or energy. God is Light, and so there are wave energies of light called photons. There are gravitational forces, and nuclear forces. All of these forces depict how God created the universe, as shown in Romans 1.

ACCIDENTAL CREATION NOT POSSIBLE

Job had some insights into this; and now, you will be exposed to the questions God asked of Job.

**Job 38:4 Where wast thou when I laid the foundations
of the earth? declare, if thou hast understanding.**

“⁴Where were thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare it if thou hast understanding.” “Understanding,” as you have learned, is “logic,” or “common sense,” coupled with wisdom, which is “the skill to handle The Facts, The Knowledge and The Truth.”

Put some of this knowledge together. In Job, God explains the earth was like a circle. Job knew the earth was not flat, although people thought it was flat well into The Middle Ages. How did God position the foundation of the earth?

Scientists tell you that the gravitational pull depends on the masses and distances between them. Now interestingly, the earth does not orbit in a perfect circle, but elliptically around the sun. The sun, having a much larger mass than the earth, exerts a stronger gravitational pull.

The moon has a smaller mass, with less gravity, and it orbits the earth. The moon is the major contributor to the tides. The effect of the sun on the tides is less than half that of the moon.

Many Christians ask, “How can people believe in evolution?” Evolution works on two principles: 1) survival of the fittest; and 2) adaptation to changing environmental conditions. All this is supposed to happen entirely by chance. In other words, when a species is trying to survive, it adapts to its environment in whatever way it possibly can.

So, the scientists who believe in evolution have caused their own problems. They put a date on the universe with its age. Quite

percentage of completion (i.e., 2.7×10^{-56} %). This is 2.7 divided by 1, followed by 56 zeroes!

HOW MANY LIFETIMES?

How many universe lifetimes would it take to evolve enough molecules to make a human being? With approximately 1.6×10^{27} molecules in the average adult human body, it could take a **bewildering 5.8×10^{84} universe lifetimes!** The evolution theory requires an almost implausible amount of time for human kind to be created, making evolution logically improbable.

Yockey concluded, “The origin of life, by chance in a primeval soup, is impossible in probability, in the same way that a perpetual motion machine is impossible in probability.” If the foundation of the earth is to be laid, there had to be time – in fact, by evolutions own criteria, a great deal of time.

The earth remains in its orbit around the sun by means of gravitation. How much time was needed for evolution (all these forces) to allow the earth to come into existence – and then to remain in its stable orbit? Forever! On a mathematical basis, the probability of species evolving over the evolutionary time period is not feasible, even if the earth had existed for a hundred billion years. Evolution just isn’t based upon scientific fact.

LAW OF PROBABILITY

The Law of Probability should be enough to discredit evolution. The

geologic time table of fossils, which the evolutionists so fondly embrace, contributes to the invalidation of evolution. In the final analysis, the theory of evolution remains a theory. It is an assumption that just doesn't add up logically.

The world famous scientist Stephen J. Gould co-authored a paper in 1977 in which he proposed the theory of **Punctuated Equilibrium**. In this theory, rather than a slow, continuous progression of species, Punctuated Equilibrium is characterized by long periods of virtual standstill ("equilibrium"), "punctuated" by episodes of very fast development of new life forms.

The lack of proof of Darwinian evolution in the fossil record, going all the way back to the earliest geologic time periods, fostered this idea of Punctuated Equilibrium. This theory has been developed as a cover for the failure of the theory of evolution.

PUNCTUATED EQUILIBRIUM

Punctuated Equilibrium is the theory (which in itself lacks scientific proof) that new species "pop-up" at some point, and do not have to evolve over long periods of time. The cause of these new species is some sort of random environmental change – or mutation.

The entire perspective revealed by the fossil evidence is claimed to demonstrate evolutionary change. According to Gould, pop-up species' non-appearance in the fossil record must happen very fast in small isolated areas.

Denton, another scientist, has cited studies based upon modern species that suggest up to 85% of all animals are preserved in the fossil record. He further states that there is absolutely no reason whatsoever to assume the fossil record is anything other than a highly accurate and detailed account of the development of life on earth.

The sudden arrival, however, of almost all modern phyla of invertebrate life, is a direct contradiction of the prediction made by Darwin's theory of gradual change and intermediate forms. In other words, The Darwinian Theory of Evolution is, and always has been, held as an article of faith that is devoid of a provable basis in fact.

Once The Big Bang happened, and the universe started to expand, how long did it take for gravity, for electromagnetism, for the strong and weak nuclear forces to evolve to the state now seen through the telescopes? This includes planets revolving around stars, stars revolving around their galactic centers, and groups of galaxies moving through space.

Scientists haven't allowed enough time (10-20 billion years) for this to take place. Twenty billion X's twenty billion years is still not enough. It is mathematically impossible that creation began in evolutionary terms.

PRECISE MATHEMATICAL BALANCE

All the factors favoring the existence of life on earth have to exist in a precise mathematical balance. The earth needs to be the right distance

from the sun. If it is too close, the earth is cindered into cosmic dust. If it is too far, the earth turns frigidly cold.

The moon must have its mathematical gravitational pull exactly in balance with the earth's gravitational pull. If it were off just a fraction, the earth would be flooded with huge tidal waves. One scientist, Hugh Ross, estimated the probability of finding a planetary body with the necessary parameters for supporting life ("Probability for a Life Support Body," An Estimate of the Probability for Attaining the Necessary Parameters for Life Support," "Reasons to Believe").

After analyzing 165 parameters for life support, he concluded that there was less than 1 chance in 10^{182} that even one such planet would occur anywhere in the universe. How in the world could evolution, with no intelligence, accidentally get it all mathematically correct? How can scientists expect you to follow this mathematically, when their theories virtually have no substance?

THE FIRST CAUSE

Some scientists think there is "no God" right from the beginning. How do they claim it all started? One of the latest theories is that the cosmos got its start from "a little light wave." Now, what was the origin of that little light wave?

In other words, what started it all? The evolutionists theorize that it all started from nothing. What, it all started from NOTHING? Light, traveling at 186,300 miles per second, can only do so through a vacuum.

What is a vacuum? It means there is nothing. There's nothing there because if you put any mass in front of light, it either gets diffused (spreads out when it hits the mass) or it refracts (dissipates as it breaks up) or it is reflected off at an angle. That's what happens to light.

THE FIRST WAVE

So what started the first wave? You don't even have to assume it is a wave. Evolutionists are in error because the first wave cannot come from nothing. It had to start from something. It's a very simple premise. You cannot start something from nothing. Nothing plus nothing equals nothing. That's not complicated. It doesn't take a rocket scientist to understand this. You can't get something from nothing: that is an absolute truth.

What if there was something there, either God or something? Well, if it wasn't God, but something, then what started that something? Scientists say something else started that something. Well, what started that something when something else started that something? As you can see, this thinking process goes on endlessly.

In other words, it either all started from "something," or there never was a start. And if so, you can't have things evolve into something. In reality, you are left with only one conclusion: whatever it was that was "in the beginning," that "something" had to "always be." If you get caught in the circular trap that there was always something before something else, it never ends. You never have a beginning. But, realistically you know there must be "a beginning."

René Descartes (1596-1650), a French philosopher, published in 1641 his most famous work, "Meditations on First Philosophy." In this set of six essays, he speculated on, among other things, his actual existence. His conclusion: the famous Latin phrase, "cogito, ergo sum" or "I think, therefore, I am." He said, "Since I'm conscious, and I'm here, then I'm here. I exist because I think."

QUESTIONS ABOUT EVOLUTION

Well, God says, "Since you see the universe, therefore, it was created." It could not have started from nothing. When you ask questions about evolution, you deal with these answers. Evolutionists say, "I don't know," or evade the question and attempt to throw you off track. It is usually one or the other.

Just dealing with the forces, and throwing time into evolution, there is simply just not enough time to cause the theory to make sense. You would need **an uncalculated amount of time** to make sense of the theory.

Mathematically, an equation cannot be created to resolve the evolutionary conundrum. You couldn't prove it if you could! There's not enough time. You can't do an " $E = mc^2$." Did the four fundamental forces exist before The Big Bang? If so, where did they come from?

Most know there are asexual things in the world such as amoebas. Amoebas self-produce. If a scientist believes in evolution, he might say, "Well, you know, the amoeba – it reproduces itself." Yes, that's a fact.

But how in the world did we go from this amoeba to species requiring another being for reproduction?

THE FIRST HUMAN

How did the first human being (not considering Adam and Eve) come into being? How long could that human -- that very first one, whether it was a man or woman -- it matters not -- how long did that living entity need to evolve or wait around for the other one to come along in order to reproduce? How about the first wolf? How about the first orchards, bushes and flowers, which didn't know that bees had to pollinate them? They never would have survived, and you certainly can't adapt to what doesn't happen. That's just another strike against evolution – revealing how ridiculous the theory truly is.

Species do, indeed, disappear through environmental changes, whether caused by man or by nature. But, of all the species that exist in the macro-world (the huge world including the universe around you), and the micro-world (the viral and bacterium, et cetera), which require a mate for reproduction, how long did it take those mates to come into being?

Evolution is not the answer. Ultimately, if you have all these micro and macro species all over the earth, you should be seeing the changes all over the earth. But you find not one missing link. What you see is one “kind” born after its own “kind.” The changes that evolution predicts are not to be found. They are not anywhere.

There are just too many things in God's Creation! To evolve to all the myriads of species, there is just not enough time to calculate it logically. The earth and the universe, even if ten to twelve billion years old – that is still not enough time. Even with a hundred billion years considered and calculated, it would still not be enough time for every microbe, for every plant, for every animal, for every human being, to evolve into what they are today.

GOD, THE DESIGNER

There just was not enough time for everything to evolve from nothing. God, The Designer, The Creator, is a Being who had to always exist.

Exodus 3:13-14 ¹³And Moses said unto God, Behold, when I come unto the children of Israel, and shall say unto them, The God of your fathers hath sent me unto you, and they shall say to me, What is his name? What shall I say unto them? ¹⁴And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you.

God's name depicts The First Cause. Moses was given the big job by God to lead his people out of Egypt. Moses asks, "¹³When I come unto the children of Israel, and shall say unto them, The God of your fathers hath sent me unto you, and they shall say to me, What is his name?" God said unto Moses, "¹⁴I AM THAT I AM." This is written this way because in the Hebrew it really means, "I've always existed, I exist now, and I always will exist (in the future)."

You ask: “How can it be that God always existed?” If something didn’t always exist, did that mean there was something before that? If there was always something before that, there was no beginning because there was always something before that. It makes more sense for there to be a First Cause that had “all intelligence” and “all power,” as Creation itself shows. The forces were always there from The Beginning of Creation. So states true science.

THE CHOICE

On one side, you have non-creation evolutionists who say the universe and everything in it happened by accident. On the other side, you have God who is revealed through **the things that are made**, including the four fundamental forces.

Which of these two approaches makes more sense? Which choice is the wiser decision? It takes more faith to believe in mindless evolution than it takes to believe in the God who always was, who is today, and always will be.

1 Corinthians 2:14 But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

Putting this into balance, it is far more rational and much more logical to say there is an all-mighty Being with Force and Power. The Being who

always was, is now, and always will be: The One who intelligently created everything. Anyone with common sense would find it illogical to come to the conclusion that it all happened from nothing – from happenstance.

The reason evolutionists do not see it, and why they cannot see it: **“¹⁴the natural man receives not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.”**

You now understand the forces that cannot be seen, the invisible forces, which hold up the foundation of the world, and how they maintain the smallest atom to the largest galaxy in its ordered arrangement. God says once you start to learn about His invisible forces, you are without excuse. God reveals His proof right through His Word that Creation came only from Him. God is Real. God Exists. It is an absolute.

TIME FOR CHOOSING

Now choose. True science has shown how the universe is made and exists by these fundamental forces. Science, however, has to admit that the existence of these forces before “The Big Bang” cannot be known.

Even though The Bible does not state the universe started from a Big Bang, The Bible agrees with the plausibility of it when God rolled out the universe as a curtain. It does show clearly that real science does indeed agree with God's Word.

Psalm 104:2 Who coverest thyself with light as with a garment: who stretchest out the heavens like a curtain:

God tells you these invisible forces come from Him. He created “The Big Bang.” The Bible states, (God stretched) “**2out the heavens like a curtain:**” perhaps just as you open up a curtain or a drape. Science calls it The Fabric of The Universe.

As detailed earlier, evolution is loaded with inconsistencies. It has been demonstrated here that if you give evolution the benefit of the doubt (considering all the matter in the universe), the only conclusion you can come to is there just isn't enough time for everything to evolve in a slow, uniform manner. The Second Law of Thermodynamics states that things do not go from the simple to complex, but rather, that everything, including creation itself, is in a process of decay.

WHAT IS A THEORY?

A “theory” is just a model of what scientists guess could possibly be the answer. One of the world's most prominent scientists of our day, Stephen W. Hawking, states in his book, “A Brief History of Time,” (page 140-141): “So long as the universe had a beginning, we could suppose it had a Creator.”

Many scientists, rather than admit that the universe had a beginning, and that God does exist, persistently search for proof that the universe never had a beginning, and hence an omnipotent, omnipresent, “Timeless Designer” was unnecessary.

Among the latest conjectures on how the universe came to be, as

postulated by Stephen Hawking and others, is the "M-Theory." This theory hypothesizes that there are other dimensions besides the four dimensions of length, width, height, and time.

Hawking believes that a fifth dimension may exist, and maybe even more dimensions beyond that. If this is so, he postulates a fifth dimension existing before "The Big Bang," which started the present universe.

Now comes the significant part. Hawking states that before there was "The Big Bang," everything was a true vacuum or nothing. Since there was nothing, however, something had to be there which started everything.

Hawking theorized there was an "**Ekpyrosis**." This is a Greek word meaning "conflagration," or "consuming fire," and refers to an ancient Stoic cosmological model. According to the model, the universe is created in a sudden burst of Fire. Hence, the current universe evolves from that initial Fire.

A CONSUMING FIRE

Amazingly, Hebrews 12:29 states, "**For our God is a consuming fire.**" This is the very same definition given by Hawking. In addition, Stephen Hawking said this consuming Fire, or Ekpyrosis, always existed.

He reservedly assigns a First Cause for everything, but did not ascribe intelligence to this Ekpyrosis. God is The First Cause who is an all-intelligent Being and an all-consuming Fire. True science actually confirms the very existence of God.

Other leading scientists agree with Hawking that “intelligence” was behind the creation of the universe. Allan Sandage, one of the world’s leading astronomers, has declared that “The Big Bang” can be understood only as a “miracle;” and Charles Townes, a Nobel-winning physicist and co-inventor of the Laser, said the discoveries of physics “seem to reflect intelligence at work in natural law.”

ILLOGICAL THINKING

1. Something can start from nothing. NOTHING CAN START FROM NOTHING.
2. Evolution follows the laws of science. NO, IT DOESN'T.
3. Species can engender new species. CAN THEY?
4. To pursue evolution, given all the unresolved complexities, confronting it, is too futile to make sense of it, let alone follow. HOW TRUE.

LOGICAL THINKING

1. The universe substantiates a design involving complex laws. Open your eyes and see the handiwork of God.
2. God always existed and needs no beginning. The First and the Last.
3. The universe, including all humanity, demands intelligence as its genesis rather than an accidental beginning from nothingness. It is what gives sense and meaning to life itself!
4. Accepting a First Cause by One who had Intelligence and all the Power to make it happen -- perfectly. Logic dictates logic.

One is left with the choice of either pursuing the illogical approach – that the universe came about by accident -- or that God created mankind and His universe with a Divine Purpose. Common sense demands the latter

choice. There is no getting around it. GOD IS THE CREATER OF THE UNIVERSE AND OF ALL MANKIND.

CHAPTER 2

GOD'S PUZZLE

The Bible is God's instruction book about all vital concerns. It gives the broad overall concepts. When a person learns about the "First Cause," and accepts this Great Power as The Maker of The Universe – it is time to follow all the laws He laid forth – and embrace His Word. Then you will discover The Purpose of Life. In this process, the so-called "puzzle of life" will come together.

Eventually, you will be on the road to understanding the complete story. But you must make the effort to read and study God's Word. When you do, it will be amazing how the pieces of the puzzle begin to fall into place. These pieces create a wondrous mosaic of your life! Now consider what God said to Moses:

Exodus 3:14 "And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you."

God said that his name is "¹⁴**I am that I am.**" God is saying, "I always

was, I am now, and I always will be: I am what I am.” By this declaration, humans are confronted with a challenge to perceive the underlying basis for the intellectual recognition – that God created everything.

Why did God create everything? Why were humans born? To find the answers to these and other questions, you must find out who God is.

MANY CLAIMS ARE MADE

Many religions claim to know “the truth.” The Judaeo-Christian religion bases its belief in The Old Testament. Secular Christians base their belief in The New Testament, while generally ignoring The Old Testament. Then, there are other Christians who believe in both The New and The Old Testaments. Other religions such as The Muslims (with over a billion followers) believe in Islam.

Of course, there are many other large religious faiths, such as Buddhism, Hinduism, and Taoism. From these sources, each individual will need to decide where to find THE TRUE GOD, His Purpose, and the identity of His Plan for all Mankind.

Muslims believe that Allah is God – the one and only true God. Biblically, in the Hebrew language, you find the word “El” (or Allah) means “one God.” Muslims also believe that Mohammed is their prophet. Mohammed believed in four books, three of which are found in The Bible.

Some think that Muslims only believe in The Koran. But they accept a total of four books as being of Divine origin. These four books are: (#1)

The Law of Moses which is The Book of Moses, (#2) The Book of David as the account of King David, (#3) The New Testament about Jesus Christ, [deeming it Divine], and (#4) The Koran.

The Koran tells Muslims that the purpose of God is to have His believers go into The Garden – meaning The Garden of Eden (or Paradise). With the recent events on 9/11/01, our nation has been made aware that the Muslim faith proclaims that there is no fear of death for the Muslim. When a Muslim dies, they believe that they immediately go to Paradise. However, this does not guide a person to the true purpose of God's plan here on earth. Something more is required.

Then there are those who follow Buddha. He was born in 563 B.C. and eventually came to be known as the “Enlightened One” – or the “bringer of knowledge.” Buddhists believe that to be human and worldly – is to be wicked. Buddha's teachings were intended to enlighten everyone with a variety of one-paragraph statements on how to avoid wickedness.

Through meditation, Buddhists believe they can exist outside the physical reality of this world. By following these meditation rituals, Buddhists can get rid of all the negative (evil) things that are part of the human experience. Their central purpose in life is to become “enlightened” – or to finally reach what is called Nirvana. Thus they would become at one with the universe.

WHY ARE YOU HERE?

But in all this, what about The Big Plan as to why you are here? Who is

The True God that these religions presume to introduce? What is His Plan?

Buddhism is a road map without a beginning – and with only a vague destination. The claim is that God is one – but this concept of “oneness” is held in a different sense than that proposed by the West.

On the other hand, the Hindus believe in many, many gods. They are guided through the labyrinth of life. Teaching a person to speak less and listen more is very acceptable as a positive behavioral structure. But Hinduism provides only a path. You do not find a beginning, or an end.

INCOMPLETE UNDERSTANDING

These are only simple examples of the philosophies found in various religions, and they all point to the incompleteness of their core beliefs. No matter what books you may examine about various religious beliefs, only The Bible gives you the complete understanding of God and His Purpose.

The Bible not only tells you who God is, what He is composed of, how He looks, and what His powers are, but this book also defines God's personality and character. Consequently, Christianity is a religion that is amazingly different from all the other alternatives.

The Bible tells you God's entire Plan and Purpose – from the time when He created the universe – all the way down to the time when His Plan will be completed. After looking at the different religions from a viewpoint of

“logic,” it should make more sense to go to the true source, which tells all about God. It is The Bible that gives you the complete answer.

When a person speaks with other individuals who are not familiar with The Bible, a common response is that The Bible is confusing to them. When I had been inducted into military service, it was near the end of World War II. It was then that I opened The Bible for the first time.

PACIFIC OCEAN

The military had placed us on a weather vessel to go out into the Pacific Ocean for 30 days at a time. Our only job was to find hurricanes! We were required to find the bad weather so we could radio this vital information back to the United States. This data informed aircraft flight crews about where they could or could not fly. So there have been many hurricanes in my life. They're no fun.

The Pacific Ocean is just what the word says -- Pacific, meaning “very peaceful” and “calm.” Often our ship would be thousands of miles from land – and as one looked out over the ocean, it was so calm that it resembled a glass sheet. It appeared as if you could walk on that smooth glass-like surface. Then, at other times, it was so bad that everyone was seasick, including the salty captain. Everyone would sit on the deck attempting to get all the fresh air they could breathe in.

Some of us would prearrange to have a crate of oranges handy so that we could suck on them. I would get so sick, and implore God: “Please let me die.” On the other hand, it was quite boring in between the hurricanes and

the calm of the blue Pacific Ocean. So I read everything in the ship's library. In time, at 30-day clips, any sailor would run out of books. I found there was one book that hadn't been read. That is when I opened The Bible.

OPENING THE BIBLE

Reading and studying The Bible in between frequent bouts of hurricane seasickness gave me the opportunity to attempt to understand The Bible's meaning. Most of it was confusing, and it didn't make sense. Coming from a Christian background, I understood many things – like the existence of God, and that Jesus Christ was The Son of God. He sacrificed Himself to Save all the people in the world. I understood all about that, but I never really comprehended where this Bible information was leading.

I knew about God and Christ – and the stories about Moses, Daniel, and the Lion's Den. I knew about Noah in the Ark – just as most young people do. Everyone usually knows about Noah and the Ark with all the animals. But they don't know much more.

As I began to read The Bible, there were so many things in it that my church didn't believe in. This was perplexing. But now I was on the road to reading and studying The Bible. If you just read what The Bible says – and believe exactly what it says – then it tells a story that is different from the one you've been told. Here is the story....

THE BIBLICAL PUZZLE

The Bible contains a Puzzle. First of all, I must state that: **God is the First Cause**. Does God really reveal Himself in this Book – and does He really unravel the puzzle?

When you buy a puzzle box with all the pieces, you usually see the picture of the puzzle on the box. The box in which you would obtain a new Bible usually has no picture on top. So, you would need to go through all the many pieces of information in order to know what all the contents tell you.

After over 50 years, I am still looking to see if one little piece will fit with another little piece. But I've lived long enough now to recognize – and truly believe – that all of the pieces of this grand puzzle fit together into a wonderful mosaic. In other words, God's Puzzle can be solved! This means that as you proceed to study The Bible, you will understand what God is doing – and exactly why you are here.

II Timothy 3:14-15 ¹⁴But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them; ¹⁵And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

As God reveals the overall picture, He gives instructions to those who want an understanding of His puzzle. As you study the individual pieces, you will come to know where to anchor major pieces – and how they fit

into the whole picture. The more you study God's word, the easier it will be for you to put the puzzle together. You will become so excited when you start to perceive the whole picture being assembled before your eyes.

A CHILD LEARNS

My little granddaughter loves to put puzzles together. She brings the puzzle to me when she is finished. Her face will be glowing – as a sense of triumph in accomplishment radiates from her face. She is absolutely happy and says, “Look!”

Then I will bait her by saying: “You put all those 50 pieces together?” She says, “Yes, Grandpa!” And that's exactly the way I feel when I find an important piece of the puzzle to complete another aspect of The Biblical picture. In prayer, I am excited in the same way as my granddaughter. I thank God for each extra bud of knowledge that He allows me to learn. It is a joy. It is exhilarating and wonderful. God is wonderful!

In II Timothy, God gives you instructions about putting the puzzle together. The Apostle Paul gave The Evangelist, Timothy, important teachings by explaining how he should behave himself. Paul knew it wasn't going to be long before Timothy would be required to rely totally on himself. Paul said: “**And that from a child you have known the holy scriptures which are able to make you wise unto salvation...**” (II Timothy 3:15). When you read The Bible, you should think of it from the standpoint that you are acquiring wisdom. Furthermore, this is wisdom “**unto salvation.**”

THE HOLY SCRIPTURES

Here, in this text, you find that the first thing a person should learn is how to rightly divide the teachings of The Bible. Where it says “holy scriptures” – you must discern that “Holy” first signifies “pure” or “unblemished.” Make no mistake about that. These are The Holy Scriptures **“which are able to make you wise”** – so you can learn about Salvation. This is the culmination of what God has Planned for every person **“through faith which is in Christ Jesus.”**

All Scripture, at this time, was only found in The Old Testament. The New Testament had not yet been completed. But realize that God not only looks to The Old Testament as Holy Scripture, but also to The New Testament. Christians must come to understand that The Holy Scriptures consist of The Old Testament along with The New Testament.

Paul told Timothy: **“Study to show yourself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth”** (II Timothy 2:15). Nothing comes easy. So you cannot study The Bible too much.

FAITH WITH PRAYER AND STUDY

The Scriptures tell you that The Bible is a puzzle – and that you must know how to separate (develop) The Word. It is unwise to make an interpretation that does not fit the context. Rather, you just need another piece of the puzzle. With prayer and study – in time, you will find it.

Have FAITH. Hence, with time and study, you will, also, be able to assemble the complete picture.

II Peter 3:16 As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction.

In reality, The New Testament tells you that this section of the overall Bible can also be called The Holy Scriptures (II Peter 3:16). Hence, the entire Bible consists of The Old and New Testaments.

Going further, you find II Timothy 3:16 reveals how all of Christ's words come from God. This text says: **“All scripture is given by inspiration of God and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness.”** This means that The Scriptures will teach you about The True God who made the universe – and how this universe was made. The Bible holds, in detail, God's Purpose and Plan. In short, The Bible explains how to piece the puzzle together.

THE TRIANGLE GAME

Once in a while, my family goes to a restaurant where they have a little triangle game with pegs in it to pass the time. Our granddaughter jumps one over the other. When you finally get down to two, you are quite intelligent. If you get down to one, you are close to being a genius!

My little granddaughter will say, "I have five left." I answer, "Do it again." Then she's busy for another period of time. Later she'll say, "I've got three." I encourage her: "Oh that's pretty good. Do it again."

Well, lo, and behold, once in a while, she gets down to two. Later, we found they have a little pamphlet that tells you what to do to get to one – genius level. The Bible, also, has instructions with a formula that will unscramble The Puzzle of Life.

Isaiah 28:9-10 ⁹Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts.

¹⁰For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little:

God is a loving God, an omnipotent being, who will never leave you in the dark. **⁹Whom shall he teach knowledge.** Who is God? What is He like? What is He made of? How does He think? What is God's personality? What is His character? What is He doing? Why are you here? All that can be found in this one statement. **⁹Whom shall God teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand learning or doctrine?"**

UNDERSTANDING DOCTRINE

"Doctrine" just means "teaching." It is not a special ritual. Although some groups do have ritualistic doctrines, this Bible text specifies how you

can understand the knowledge about what God is doing on this earth.

“⁹Them who are weaned from the milk and drawn from the breast.”

The first thing you must do to begin to understand this Biblical puzzle – is to become as a little child. **“¹⁰For precept must be upon precept.”** One thought is compared with another thought. Not only is this an idea-upon-idea concept – but it is also a line-upon-line study. There is one line here and another line there. It is **“here a little, and there a little.”** You must be innocent, and eager to learn by having no preset ideas.

Why did God design it this way? It would have been much easier if He had written an outline-type of story. He could have explained everything by laying it out simply – just as with an instructional manual. He could have said that He was God, what He's made of, what He looks like, and what His Plan is. He could have explained how life is to be lived. But God intended all this to be a puzzle.

Now examine a couple of examples that illustrate a Biblical puzzle. This may come as a shock – as you put the pieces together,

Revelations 16:17-18 ¹⁷And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, It is done. ¹⁸And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, and so great.

A MYSTICAL BOOK

The Bible is purposely mysterious, and Revelation is known as the mystical book. In Revelation, it mentions seven seals, and seven thunders. It reveals a tribulation, and it has the vial of wrath from God at the very end. This could be quite confusing to the reader who sees the seventh angel (in Verse 17) pouring out his violence into the air!

This is the time just before the return of Jesus. **“¹⁷And the seventh angel poured out his vile into the air and became a great voice out of the temple of heaven from the throne saying, It is done.”** Now the completion of The Plan of God is ready to take place. **“¹⁸And there were voices and thunderings and lightnings and there was a great earthquake.”**

THE GREAT EARTHQUAKE

Who would think this major piece of the puzzle would be at the conclusion of The Bible? This isn't in The Old Testament. It is in The New Testament! You will find an important piece of the puzzle in Revelation 16 that connects with the beginning of Genesis!

The connection is astounding! It tells you about a great earthquake such as **“¹⁶was not since men were on the earth.”** This comes completely out of the blue. The Bible states that a tremendous earthquake will occur in The City of Jerusalem. One-third of the city will fall. Only two-thirds of The City of Jerusalem will remain.

A major feature of geography concerns the great Rift Valley that goes down through Jerusalem into The Gulf of Aqaba, and out to The Red Sea. From there it reaches into Africa. Then it extends all the way down to South Africa – and goes out into The Indian Ocean. How big was the earthquake that created this great crack in the earth? Of what magnitude was this earthquake? This one may have been a 20 on The Richter Scale.

Scientists say that with each point up on The Richter scale, the force is comparable to a hundred thousand pounds of dynamite exploding. The force is horrendous. What in the world is the conclusion of The New Testament telling you? Astoundingly, it is telling you what happened in the very beginning before man appeared in the Genesis creation.

Genesis 1:1-13 ¹In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. ²And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. ³And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. ⁴And God saw the light, that it was good and God divided the light from the darkness. ⁵And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day. ⁶And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters. ⁷And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above firmament: and it was so. ⁸And God called

the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day. ⁹And God said, Let the waters under the heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear: and it was so. ¹⁰And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called he Seas: and God saw that it was good. ¹¹And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so. ¹²And the earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, after his kind: and God saw that it was good. ¹³And the evening and the morning were the third day.

In going back to the beginning, your goal is to fit the puzzle together. There are very simple statements in Genesis, which are rather astounding.

“¹In the beginning, God” [God being the first cause] “created the heaven and the earth. ²And the earth was without form and void and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.”

Different theories exist in various religious groups about these two verses. One is called The Gap Theory. It concludes that from Genesis 1:1 to Genesis 1:2 there is a big gap of time – hence the name, The Gap Theory. But how can you prove it?

ORIGINAL STATE OF THE WORLD

In Genesis 1 you find that the earth “became void and without form,” which in Hebrew is “bohuw” and “tohuw.” These two words show how the earth was in the beginning. When God created it, it could have been billions of years old. **“²And the earth.”** Was the earth created in six days? No, it was already in prior existence. You may have thought it was created in six days, but Genesis tells you that it was already there as a physical reality.

Was there an earthquake before Adam and Eve? Look at this little piece of the puzzle at the end of The Bible in Revelation. It tells you that there was never an earthquake like the one that is going to shake Jerusalem at the end time. Well, if the earth was created in six days, what are you going to find? It was an earthquake shaking everything up.

If you don't find an earthquake, what does that mean? It means that an earthquake happened before the six days of man's creation. **“³God said, Let there be light: and there was light.”** Then you find that He made day and night – and that was the end of the first day.

Now, concerning the earthquake. There is no statement of an earthquake. **“⁶God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters”** because the earth was there. He definitely did not create the earth in six days, because it existed long before the first six days started. It was already in place, except that water was above the earth, in the atmosphere.

THE FIRST LIGHT

You, also, find that God first caused the light to penetrate from above, which leads one to realize how the sun must have been in position. If the sun was not created until the fifth day, then where did this light come from? Well, there is an explanation. It could have come from God, because as was discussed, God is light.

Keep that in mind for now, but continue to examine the concept of this earthquake. God said, **“⁶Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters.”** Then He made the heaven. Still there is no earthquake to take into account. In Verse 9, dry land appears. Finally, **“¹²earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed.... ¹³And the evening and the morning were the third day.”**

Genesis 1:14-19 ¹⁴And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years: ¹⁵And let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth: and it was so. ¹⁶And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also. ¹⁷And God set them in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth. ¹⁸And to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw

that it was good. ¹⁹And the evening and the morning were the fourth day.

THE FOURTH DAY

During the fourth day, God points to the lights that were already in the heavens. So He didn't make the sun and the moon on the fourth day. They were already there. All He did was to adjust them. But for what Purpose? It was for seasons and times. So where is the earthquake? There is no earthquake. Then there is the sixth day, bringing forth the animals and man. There is no earthquake then either.

Genesis declares that before Adam and Eve were made, there was a great earthquake. Did that great earthquake need to happen before the sixth day?

If you were going to take that little piece of the puzzle, where would you put it? You would have to put it between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2. Can you fathom this? How many years would you think you would need to study in order to put all the pieces of the puzzle together? Most would agree that it would take a long time.

Genesis 15:15-16 ¹⁵And thou shalt go to thy fathers in peace; thou shalt be buried in a good old age. ¹⁶But in the fourth generation they shall come hither again: for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full.

FAITHFULNESS OF ABRAHAM

Another piece of the puzzle shows Abraham as being completely faithful to God, by offering his own son, Isaac, as a sacrifice (it was an example patterned after God's offering of Christ). For Abraham's faithfulness, God gave him Promises. One Promise was that: **"Your seed is going to inherit this land."** What comes to your mind? It could be: "Those poor Amorites and Canaanites – why would God allow their land to be taken?"

When Israel came into position for crossing The Jordan River on their way to The Promised Land, God intended to kill all those inhabitants of the land because of their wickedness. Where does it say this?

God tells Abraham, **"¹⁵And you shall go to your fathers in peace, you shall be buried in a good old age."** Abraham was going to live out his life. He was to have a peaceful life basically, and would die very easily. He would just go to sleep.

God told Abraham before he died: **"¹⁶But in the fourth generation"** (which was 400 years to 430 years later). God then said: **"But in the fourth generation they shall come here again [Abraham's seed will come back.] for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full."** God gave the land to Israel because The Canaanites kept filling it with sin, and God said that situation had to end.

PROMISED LAND REJECTS PEOPLE

What chance do you have to understand all this? You can see an

earthquake in Revelation at the end of The Bible. It is telling you what happened in Genesis. The reason God required those people to lose their land was because they had become so violent, so sinful, and so wicked – that the land was going to spit them out.

Unless you read this part, you would never obtain the answer as to why God gave this land to The Children of Israel. You would think about those poor Amorites – and conclude that perhaps God was not really fair. But, He is a very just God. When a people follow pagan gods, and continue to pollute the very place they live, then they will not be living in that land for very long.

Isaiah 28:11 “For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people.”

Follow God's instruction to understand the whole story. **“¹¹For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people.”** God purposely intended The Bible to be confusing. He wants it to be a puzzle.

To whom does He teach knowledge? How does a child approach learning? A child is always inquisitive, searching, and always wanting to learn. A child is without preset ideas. My little granddaughter thought human beings only died when they were a hundred years old. She would say, “Well, Grandpa, you have a long time to live.” So she must figure that I'm not near that hundred mark.

Now, my mother recently died at the age of 97. Before she died, my granddaughter would say: "Now great-grandma, she's getting closer to that hundred." Then she says, "I'm never going to die." That is what she thought. So she had to be told the truth. Always tell everyone the truth because if you don't, you will pay a penalty down the road.

EVERYONE WILL DIE

So I said, "Well, Rachel, someday everyone will die." That is everyone. Then she said, "Well..." (I could tell that she got a cloud on her face). This factual statement affected her. She was quite disturbed about this. I said, "But God is going to resurrect everyone."

Her face started to change. I said: "Rachel, when you die, you just go to sleep... and God will eventually change everyone from being bad or evil." "Oh really. Mommy and Grandpa and Grandma and Auntie?" I said, "Yes," "Ohhhh," she sighed.

Everything was better after that. Now she accepts death. She was seven year's old at the time, and accepted the notion of death. She still asks me different questions about it. She will throw questions at me all the time. What is she doing? First, she is very innocent. She knows she doesn't know the answer. She has no preset ideas. My 17-year old Grandson asked the same questions when he was her age.

Mark 10:13-15 ¹³And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them: and his disciples rebuked those that brought them. ¹⁴But when Jesus

saw it, he was much displeased, and said unto them. Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.”¹⁵ Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.

You have read how The Old Testament reveals the process of disclosing the puzzle. So, The Bible is understandable. Now, check The New Testament to find the requirements needed for you to perceive a clearer picture of The Bible.

To whom will God teach knowledge? It is to those who are fed from the breast, to drink milk. What is Christ trying to tell you? You must become as little children, and as you know, it is not easy.

BIBLE IN THE NAVY

I started to read The Bible in the Navy at the age of 20. I couldn't understand it. I just saw stories with differences from my prior religious belief. This background contradicted what The Bible was explaining to me. It wasn't until I was 30 that I began to understand, and, therefore, changed some of those preset ideas. I had an education with different degrees from universities and colleges. I had studied science, physics, astronomy, geology, cosmology, and logic.

So you can imagine how all these different teachings were contradicting and confusing. Christ said: **“Who did he go to preach to.”** He preached

to the poor. He preached to the unlearned. They would listen because they had no preset ideas.

Whenever you get involved in a religion, you will begin to believe those specific religious teachings. The process of coming out of pre-conceived ideas is very hard. In your specific case, it may be education, religion, or self-pride from which you must extricate yourself. In all cases, you must first let go of your ego.

Unless you become as a little child, you will not understand The Bible. You must come to the point where nothing you think is religiously right or wrong. When you read the account in Revelation that a big earthquake took place before Adam and Eve, then that is what you believe. If it seems to contradict science, then that is what you still continue to believe.

If The Bible tells you that the reason God kicked The Canaanites out of the land, was so He could give it to the children of Abraham, you believe it. When you come to that place, then God will open your understanding to many more of His Truths.

NOT EVERYONE UNDERSTANDS

At times, God doesn't seem fair. God could have made everyone perfect in the beginning – and for you to know everything in the beginning. Why does all this confusion exist? Why does The Bible call life a mystery?

Throughout the history of The Bible, you find that God only disclosed certain revelations to His Prophets. God waited almost to the end when

His Son was born, to begin disclosing more of His Plans. Why did God do that?

I Corinthians 15:21-26 ²¹For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. ²²For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. ²³**But every man in his own order:** Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming. ²⁴Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. ²⁵For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet. ²⁶The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.

I Corinthians 15 is known as The Resurrection Chapter. God can cause certain ones to stumble in reading His Word. This is the time when God resurrects humanity from the dead. This is compared to a sleep to which everyone is appointed. **“²¹For since by man [speaking of Christ] came also the resurrection of the dead. ²²For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.”**

Everyone will be resurrected. No one is excluded. Going on in the text, you read: **“²³But every man in his own order.”** In I Corinthians 15:29, God is telling you that His basic Purpose is to reproduce Himself by building a family, with **“every man in His own order.”**

FAMILY PLANNING

God believes in “family planning.” God does not have children promiscuously. God doesn't go ahead and just have children whether He wants them or not. In fact, the story about The Plan of God reveals that He has already written your name in a book. This occurred long before you were born.

That is true family planning! In fact, God knows every hair on your head. So it is: **“²³Every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming. ²⁴Then cometh the end,”** [Revelation also reveals this] **“when he shall have delivered up the Kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. ²⁵For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet.”**

WHEN THE END COMES

The end will not take place until all the enemies of God are put down. God keeps all those enemies ignorant. They stumble because of this lack of knowledge. The very last enemy, death, shall finally be destroyed. God has put all things under His (Christ's) feet when He said **“all things are put under Him.”** In other words, Christ was accepted by The Father to put everything under Christ's jurisdiction until that final end-time.

Why doesn't God want everyone to know The Truth from the beginning? Everyone simply has his/her own time sequence. God works with each

person to Save each one at the right time (II Peter 3:9). Why would God want to be so discriminating? Even if one group is ignorant, eventually, He will let them know The Whole Plan.

Since The Bible is a puzzle, God has given you every single piece. But you will only find the pieces coming together through much prayer and diligent study.

In Matthew 13:10-16, Christ said that He only revealed The Truth to those who are ready to receive it according to God's timetable. Jesus went on and said that if the others understood – then He would be required to heal them before it was the best time for them to be Saved. So God will work with each and every human being at the right time for them to be Saved. What a loving God!

II Timothy 3:16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:

Many people argue whether one book or another book should be a part of The Bible. They argue about the authorship of the different books. There is only one author – God. The Bible says, “¹⁶**All scripture is given by inspiration of God.**” In prayer, reading, and studying The Bible, you will come to find this book is written by scribes or reporters, who after much investigation and detective work, would write everything down under inspiration.

WHO COULD INVENT THIS?

No one could dream this up. No man could. How could anyone tell you about an earthquake before Adam and Eve, unless they were actually there on location? No one could have known all this but God. One being, God, authors it all. This is the entire instruction book called THE BIBLE!

II Peter 3:8-9 ⁸But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. ⁹The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to usward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

When you don't understand, you think The Bible is confusing. Christian scholars always seem to memorize this verse, **“One day is with the Lord as a thousand years”** along with the statement that: **“The Lord is not slack [slow] concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to usward.”** God is not prejudiced against some people, while on the other hand, prejudiced against others.

Some people want others to suffer in The Lake of Fire. Yet in God's Plan He clearly states: **“Not willing that any should perish.”** He also says: **“Who will have all men to be saved...”** (I Timothy 2:4). How can anyone get around these clear texts? These texts mean that it is God's intent is everyone will be Saved. You may pray The Lord's Prayer, **“Thy Kingdom come, Thy will be done.”** God can and will fulfill His Plan.

Do you want to fight God? It is God's firm "Will" for all to be Saved, but only in their proper order.

NONE WILL PERISH

Perhaps previous teachings hold you back from studying this part of the puzzle. It states that God is not willing that any should perish. Do you believe it? It may be hard to understand in light of Biblical characters like Judas – or historical monsters like Hitler, Stalin, Usama Bin Laden, and Saddam Hussein. So you have two choices – (#1) decide The Bible is not what it says, or else (#2) choose to believe it. The choice is yours.

If you come as a little child, His word will teach you. When God says, **"Not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance,"** what happens to those people who go into The Fire? Eventually, they will repent **"in his own order."**

Why is God taking such long a time before He returns? Why is He so patient? Because God wants no one to be lost. God wants everyone to be Saved. These revelations run throughout The Whole Bible.

Matthew 7:5-8 ⁵Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye. ⁶Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you. ⁷Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be

opened unto you: ⁸For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.

As a little, innocent child with no preset ideas, you will understand His Word. It's only confusing to your understanding when you have pre-conceived ideas. Read the following carefully:

**“⁵Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shall thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eyes [talking about truth].
⁷Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: ⁸For every one who asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.”**

In this text, Jesus talks about His Word. When you understand the pieces of this big puzzle, you need to have a very innocent child-like approach – constantly asking Him to open new Truths to you.

Hebrews 1:1-2 ¹God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, ²Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds;

This is vital instruction. Furthermore, you learn that “¹God, who at

sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets.”

The Prophets stopped prophesying about 450 years before the time of Christ. That ended the reign of The Prophets. The Jews will confirm this for you. God no longer spoke to everyone through His Prophets. Why was this? The answer begins with the statement that God: **“²Hath in these last days [the last days started with Christ] spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.”**

If Christ is the heir of all things, who tells you about it? Christ does, of course! What is The Work of God? John 6:29, states that The Work of God is to believe on Him whom God has sent. Become as a child by constantly praying to God, and asking that IT MUST BE DONE through Christ.

II Peter 3:15-16 ¹⁵And account that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given unto him has written unto you; ¹⁶As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction.

SIMPLE ANSWERS

The answers are really quite simple; it is just a matter of putting the pieces together into the proper order. And to do so, you must surrender to innocence. Open your mind to God!

Peter states, **“¹⁵And account that the longsuffering of our Lord”** [He is patient so everyone can be Saved] **“is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given unto him has written unto you; ¹⁶As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood.”**

From where does this verse come? Isaiah 28. **“Precept upon precept, line upon line.”** But who found it hard to understand? It was hard for Christians to understand. Why? Because it contradicts what their ministers and teachers had taught them. Worldly Christian teachings are directly opposite to what The Bible reveals.

LEARNING FROM GOD

It is an evolutionary process to learn from God. If you start as a child, line upon line, and precept upon precept, then you begin to put little pieces of the puzzle together. When you start to see more of the puzzle, you will begin to recognize the picture.

Christians must understand this process. When you study, you might have a battle with yourself. You must be that child within yourself. You must continually ask God in prayer to help you see the pieces of His puzzle.

Let Him know that you understand He has prepared a mystery – and open your heart to let Him reveal this mystery – and solve the puzzle. Ask Him in prayer, and then read His answers to your troubling questions in The Bible. If not, you will stumble, and you may fall.

Some Christian scholars wonder if they can really be sure Paul actually wrote this Epistle. Was it Mark or was it the secretary of Paul? When you study The Bible, you start to know who wrote The Bible by the style of the writing. God is the author of The Bible from Genesis to Revelation. It is all God's style. Arguing about who wrote this Epistle – or that Epistle – is not important, because God is the author over all.

At times, a person may explain that they just don't believe The Bible. But, after being asked if they have ever read The Bible, a common answer is "No." The Bible calls these individuals "unlearned." **"¹⁶Unto their own destruction."** Paul's letters are called Scripture.

The New Testament and The Old Testament are Holy Scriptures. The entire Bible from Genesis to Revelation is God-breathed Scriptures. It warrants that you read it, study it, and pray you can understand it. Put as many pieces of the puzzle together so that you can get the full True Story! God calls the puzzle of His Word, The Mystery of God (Revelation 10:7)!

CHAPTER 3

WHO IS GOD?

Throughout the world, Christians believe in God. Many want to obey Him. So perhaps you should know more about this God of The Bible. How does God appear? Does He have skin, bones, and tissue? Is God old, or is He young? Does God age in any way? What is God's personality? What can you learn about His character? What type of Being is God? Finally, you need to know if He is a He.

What makes God the unique Almighty One? As an individual reads The Holy Scriptures, he will find the genuine story about The One and Only True God. One of the best places to begin is with the story about a man who had an astonishing experience. This man had the opportunity to hear directly from God. Was it good news – or bad news?

JOB SEES GOD

The Book of Job begins by telling about a man who lived in ancient times. The man's name was Job – and he served God with unusual diligence (Job 1:1-5). But great calamity fell upon him. After a long period of trying to

understand all the evil that came upon him, Job was addressed by God, who said:

Job 38:3-4 ³Gird up now thy loins like a man; for I will demand of thee, and answer thou me. ⁴Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare, if thou hast understanding.

Job had some very hard lessons to learn. This encounter with The Holy One brought him to the greatest depth of REPENTANCE known to man. Job had to lose his family, his career, and then be afflicted with sickness along with excruciating pain. If that wasn't enough, Job's so-called friends tried to persuade him that all his problems were the result of hidden sins that he, himself, had committed. They told him that he needed to repent.

After a long period of suffering, Job was finally confronted directly by God who spoke with him out of the whirlwind (Job 38:1). Hence, Job became a captive listener about all the things that God had created. God declared that when He made the oceans “...**the waters would only go so far and no more**” (Job 38:11). God related how He rolled out the heavens as if it were a curtain – like The Big Bang (Job 38:31-35; Isaiah 40:22).

In all this, it was a presentation to Job about how God had created the world. Job finally came to a full realization of everything God was explaining to him. He was seeing more of the true perspective about The

Creator of this universe – and that it was God’s hand that had made everything – including the invisible laws that hold it all together.

Job 42:1-6 ¹Then Job answered the LORD, and said, ²I know that thou canst do every thing, and that no thought can be withholden from thee. ³Who is he that hideth counsel without knowledge? therefore have I uttered that I understood not; things too wonderful for me, which I knew not. ⁴Hear I beseech thee, and I will speak: I will demand of thee, and declare thou until me. ⁵I have heard of thee by the hearing of the ear; but now mine eye seeth thee. ⁶Wherefore I abhor myself, and repent in dust and ashes.

Job answered by saying: “²**I know that thou canst do every thing and that no thought can be withholden from thee.** ³**Who is he that hideth counsel without knowledge?” Job’s problem was that he was “perfect” in his ways. He was depending upon his own righteousness.**

A LOGICAL PERSPECTIVE

In order to arrive at a logical conclusion about anything, a person must have possession of all the facts. This must be done before any reasonable discussion or solution can take place. No one can give wise counsel – or have meaningful discussions when just partial knowledge is present. Who is God? Wasn’t that what Job argued about? Job emphasizes:

Job 42:3-4 ³Therefore, have I uttered that I understood not; things too wonderful for me, which I knew not.

⁴Hear I beseech thee, and I will speak. I will demand of thee, and declare thou unto me.

Job then gave a summary of what he had learned from God. He said: **“⁵I have heard of thee by the hearing of the ear.”** God talks to you through His word, The Bible. When you read God's Word, it is God's way of teaching you. But what end must you finally come to? Job continues the above thought by stating: **“⁵But now mine eye seeth thee.”** This is the conclusion of the matter.

Job finally knew who and what God was – and what He looked like. This was the hard lesson Job had to learn, and why he reported: **“³I understood not; things too wonderful for me, which I knew not.”**

One of the steps in discovering the wonderful aspects of God is by means of learning all you can about The One and Only True God. Job summarized his magnum experience. He admitted to knowing: (1) what God looks like, (2) understanding His words, (3) virtually seeing and hearing God, (4) knowing how He acts, (5) how He thinks, and finally (6) knowing what God has done.

Consequently, Job continues with this thought: **“⁶Wherefore I abhor myself, and repent in dust and ashes.”** Notice particularly that Job said: **“I abhor myself.”** How many Christians have ever come to this state of mind? How many have come to the same depth of repentance? Job

realized that his own righteousness was nothing – just as Paul understood that his own righteousness was like dung (Philippians 3:6-8).

AN ELDERLY GOD?

Most have a perspective of God being an elderly man with long white hair, and a white beard. They often envision this God as one who sits on a chair with His hand on a globe. This picture makes God look very old, and with a wrinkled face. He almost seems frightening to behold.

God can do such miraculous works, which are so powerful that He can cause mankind to be in the image of Himself. What are your thoughts about God's appearance? Then compare your own impressions with that of David's concept of God – as recorded in Psalm 27:

Psalm 27:1-4 ¹The LORD is my light and my salvation; whom shall I fear? the LORD is the strength of my life; of whom shall I be afraid? ²When the wicked, even mine enemies and my foes, came upon me to eat up my flesh, they stumbled and fell. ³Though an host should encamp against me, my heart shall not fear: though war should rise against me, in this will I be confident. ⁴One thing have I desired of the LORD, that will I seek after; that I may dwell in the house of the LORD all the days of my life, to behold the beauty of the LORD, and to inquire in his temple.

David explains why you should know God. It is because: **“¹The Lord is my light and my salvation.”** David acknowledges this thought from the very beginning. As you study, you will come to understand why David was a man after God's own heart. You will see how freely David opens his own heart to God. David continued: **“¹whom shall I fear? Of whom shall I be afraid?”** He wasn't afraid of God. **“The Lord is the strength of my life.”** In contrast, man has vulnerabilities by just existing in the human flesh with all its failings.

So, as with David, when you learn more about God, those fears will diminish. David said: **“Of whom shall I be afraid. ²When the wicked, even mine enemies and my foes, came upon me to eat up my flesh, they stumbled and fell [God was there for him]. ³Though a host, [talking about an army] should encamp against me.”**

Have you ever heard a knock on the door in the middle of the night? You are awakened from a sound sleep and can't be sure what caused the noise? Are you a bit fearful? Not David. Everyone should read about why David was the vital instrument who was used to take Goliath down.

David said: **“My heart shall not fear; though war should rise against me, in this will I be confident [David was confident]. ⁴One thing have I desired of the Lord. That will I seek after;...”** This is the ultimate objective that David pursued. It was his goal in life. It is stated as: **“That I may dwell in the house of the Lord all the days of my life,...”** And to do what? The answer is: **“To behold the beauty of the Lord. And to enquire in his temple.”** David is telling you that God is beautiful!

GOD IS BEAUTIFUL

When checking the Hebrew words used in this passage, you will find that the connotation is about God being beautiful. This translates into an expression of God being “delightfully pleasant.” When you look at God, He is delightfully pleasant – not like the pictures you have seen with long white hair, a long beard, wrinkled face, and those probing eyes. Instead, David said that God looked handsome. But in reality, God is beyond description. Words are just too limiting – no matter what language might be employed.

You cannot reduce God’s wonder and splendor into mere words. When you strive to know God, He will, in time, reveal to you His overall Plans. Your goal should be to obtain knowledge – and then by that action – you will understand The Real Purpose of Life. As you learn about God, you will know who God is.

I Corinthians 13:11-13 ¹¹When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things. ¹²For now you see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known. ¹³And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity.

The Christian world knows that I Corinthians 13 has been defined as “The Love Chapter.” It tells you about real love. But it also reveals something far more intricate. The Apostle Paul tells about the different gifts you

should seek: Faith, Hope, and Love (charity). The translation in The King James Version uses the word “charity” instead of “love” because there are different types of love. In the Greek language, there is an intellectual love – which is “agapè.” This is not just an emotional love, but rather it is an intellectual love – which is a “giving” type of love. It is a charitable act, which is a continuous outgoing type of love. It is always concerned for the other individual.

DISCERNING GOD

In reference to knowing who God is, and what He looks like, you should discern what this definition means in relationship to yourself. **“¹¹When I was a child [speaking about these gifts], I spoke as a child. I understood as a child.”** This sounds somewhat like Job, doesn't it? It was as if Job was saying: **“Why should I counsel? I didn't have knowledge.”** He just didn't have the correct factors in place. Job didn't have enough truth to speak sensibly. But on the other hand, Paul is saying:

¹¹When I was a child, I spoke like the child who understands. I thought as a child, but when I became a man, I put away childish things. ¹²For now, we see through a glass darkly.

In other words, you will only see in “shadows.” You will only know “part” of The Truth. No one can perceive completely, or have full understanding. Being human is a handicap on the eventual ability to see more perfectly The Truth about Spiritual knowledge. You will only see

parts, such as with The Holy Days, and The Sabbath, which were only shadows of things to come.

What God reveals about Himself through His Holy Word will not be a total picture – because to fully know Him is unreachable. “¹²**For now you see through a glass, darkly; but** [when you are changed, you will see Him] **then face to face.**” When you are changed, you will be like God and His Son. When you look at God (and not an angel), you will see completely.

To know the whole process of Salvation, which comes only through Jesus Christ, you will know The Father. The more you come to learn of The Father, the more you grow in knowledge and understanding. When you come to know what God is doing and why He is doing it, then you will see that it was the only possible way. He could ACHIEVE HIS GOAL. This gift of love, the ultimate Gift from God, is when you see Him face-to-face.

John 4:9-10 ⁹Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans. ¹⁰Jesus answered and said unto her, “If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water.”

WOMAN AT THE WELL

A most beautiful account is told when the Samaritan woman came to the well and Christ asked her for water. This episode became the basis for a powerful lesson.

John 4:19-24 ¹⁹The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet. ²⁰Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship. ²¹Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father. ²²Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews. ²³But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. ²⁴God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.

The Disciples were shocked to see Jesus speaking to a Samaritan woman. He said, “¹⁰**I’m going to give you water of which you will never thirst.**” He tells her that He is Christ, and that He will be able to give her “living waters.”

The Jews were given The Oracles (the truth) of God. They had been directed to worship in The Temple where God resided. Then Jesus described an alternative. He said: “²³**But the hour cometh, and now is,**

when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth.”

WORSHIP WITHOUT A TEMPLE

After the destruction of The Temple, no physical place remained for the Christians to meet. So now, Jesus Christ resides in every converted Christian person: **“For the Father seeketh such to worship him [those who worship in Spirit]. ²⁴**God, is a Spirit.”****

“Spirit” is a substance of which God is composed. On the other hand, mankind has skin and bones. Humans can be burned – and end up as dust or ash. You cannot be resurrected as skin and bones. To become a part of The Family of God, you must be resurrected as a SPIRIT.

The word for “Spirit” in the original Greek language of The New Testament is “pneuma.” The word for “Spirit” in The Old Testament is “ruak.” Both words mean “wind,” or “a huge blast of wind” – as powerful as a tornado. Wind cannot be seen. You can only see what it can do – and what it whips up within itself. You can see all the debris that it carries, but never the wind itself. You feel its impact (energy), and you can see the damage it does. You know about the force of the wind. So this force compares with the construction of God’s energy.

It is energy that is constantly on the move. It is a self-perpetuating dynamic. God is a self-perpetuating energy with no mass or matter. You can learn how energy works and how it functions within His body. God is made of this power field that is propelled like the wind.

Romans 1:20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse:

The invisible things of God are perceived by the elements that He has created. God tells you that He is like the wind. This electrical energy can be produced by the wind. Man-made windmills can create this form of energy.

As a result, God's energy creates this electricity, through which you can more perfectly perceive what His body is like. Such as lightnings, along with the power of fierce blowing winds. God is a combination of all these electromagnetic forces. Yet, these forces are just a very small part of the composition of God's body.

John 14:8-10 ⁸Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. ⁹Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father? ¹⁰Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works.

Look at those vital words: **“⁸Shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us.”** They wanted to see God. They would have been satisfied if they could see what God looked like. In response, Jesus said:

⁹Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Phillip? He that hath seen me hath seen the father. And how sayth thou then, shew us the Father?

Jesus Christ was in the flesh – and telling Phillip that God looks like Christ Himself. In other words, He looks exactly as a human being would appear. Christ continued: **“⁹He that hath seen me hath seen the Father.”** He was not made of the substance of which Christ was made. Christ was in the flesh while still on this earth.

COMPARED TO THE WIND

God is made of wind that consists of great energy. Christ’s height was probably somewhere between 5’ 7” and 6’ 5.” Perhaps within that parameter is the height of God, The Father. He has eyes, ears, mouth, legs, thighs – and everything that you have. Jesus said: **“⁹He that hath seen me hath seen the Father.”** It is very plain in The New Testament. God looks like a man, but is made of SPIRIT (or wind). Understand that wind is real even though it cannot be seen. Did you ever see a tornado or a tsunami?

Have you ever been in a windstorm or a hurricane? I can tell you from chasing hurricanes during my term of service in the Navy, that the power

of God is alive in the wind – and indeed, in all weather. Think of The Scriptures where God told Job that God is, as stated: **“I’m in the frost. Even in the frost of winter, I’m in that.”**

God made the frost also. God is perpetual energy. If God were not constantly in the process of keeping the universe going, it would collapse. Consequently, everything would be gone. So God’s Electromagnetic Energy (Spirit) keeps everything going.

Jesus said: **“¹⁰Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? The words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works.”** Jesus Christ Himself plainly tells you that He and The Father look the same. God looks like a human being. Although, He is made of Spirit – there is much more.

I John 1:1-5 ¹That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and your hands have handled, of the Word of life; ²(For the life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and shew unto you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us;) ³That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ. ⁴And these things write we unto you, that your joy may be full. ⁵This then is the message which we have heard of

him and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all.

As the student of The Bible places “...**line upon line, and precept upon precept...**” (Isaiah 28:10,13), then all the unknown mysteries of God will be pieced together, so, as far as is humanly possible, you can see The Complete Picture of the puzzle. It sounds almost sacrilegious, doesn't it? Yet God has laid it all out for you, so that, in truth, you will see what God is – and what He looks like.

FROM THE BEGINNING

Where and when is the beginning? What took place at that time? There is a record of importance in the first epistle of John.

1 John 1:1-4 ¹That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon and our hands have handled, of the Word of life; [speaking of Christ] (²For the life was manifested, and we have seen it,

The Apostle John was reporting that he saw Jesus in the correct context of all the other Apostles who lived with Jesus.

²And shew unto you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us;) ³That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is

with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ. ⁴And these things write we unto you, and your joy may be full.

With the knowledge of this information, John is reporting that by seeing Christ (who was like The Father), you will experience joy: **“⁵This then is the message, which you have heard of him and declared unto you, that...”**

GOD IS LIGHT

LIGHT is the second substance of God: **“That God is Light”** (I John 1:5). Two scientific elements of which God is composed are: (1) wind, and (2) light. All these electromagnetic forces, light, gamma rays, ultra violet rays, and nuclear forces which science has discovered, are in God – and emanate from God.

Long before scientists discovered this, God told you that: **“All those forces are in God.”** Only at this time, has science come to the place where it finally realizes that the origin of all these energy fields is from “light.” The most prevalent material of God's composition is LIGHT! LIGHT has power.

In science, researchers have found that light comes in little packages called “photons.” The energy in these photons of light is filled with little waves. The higher the frequency in the wave, the faster the wave travels – and therefore, the greater amount of energy. The stronger the photons, the more energy is produced. God is composed of LIGHT ENERGY.

Einstein was right. $E=MC^2$. Energy – (which is what God is) – equals mass times the speed of light squared.

Now you know what God is made of! He's made of LIGHT, and He is made of SPIRIT. Isn't it ironic when you start to look at His physical makeup, that you will see everything about Him radiates a powerful LIGHT? Even beyond these little photons, scientists are finding little squiggly things – or “strings.”

The latest news in science is about The String Theory. These are elements that are composed of energy. You can look at a light bulb in a room, and it illuminates. You probably don't think of the light as a being a force. But what is electricity?

Electricity is energy. So God is composed of a great amount of energy. What type of energy is this? To behold God is a “delightfully pleasant” experience. God is handsome – with no wrinkles, no long white hair, or beard. God exudes a pleasant light or radiance.

VISIONS OF DANIEL

Daniel 7:1 In the first year of Belshazzar king of Babylon Daniel had a dream and visions of his head upon his bed: then he wrote of the dream, and told the sum of the matters.

Daniel 7:9 I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of days did sit, whose garment was white as

snow, and the hair of his head like the pure wool: his throne was like the fiery flame, and his wheels as burning fire.

To solidify another part of the puzzle found in The Old Testament, you should recognize that Daniel received the same kind of information John had received in The New Testament. Nebuchadnezzar, The King of Babylon, was given a dream about a massive image (Daniel 2:31-36). Daniel explains to the king: **“This image and the interpretation, he says is you. You are the head of this image”** (Daniel 2:37). The Gentile image will exist until Christ destroys it at His Return.

This image represents the four kingdoms that will exist until The Return of Christ. To get a proper perspective about the background of this prophecy, you must read: Daniel 7:1: **“¹In the first year of Belshazzar, king of Babylon, Daniel had a dream and visions of his head upon his bed: then he wrote of the dream, and told the sum of the matters.”**

Adding to this, the angel reveals in Daniel 7:9 about the dream concerning the animals that would rule. **“⁹I beheld till the thrones were cast down.”** All this takes place after the earthly empires have been completed and the kingdoms of the world are replaced by God's Kingdom. **“⁹The thrones were cast down, and the ancient of days did sit.”** This is the time of The Great Judgment Day.

ANCIENT OF DAYS

With these texts, you begin to have a description of God, and how old He

is. God is ANCIENT! The Bible does not say that God is old – but rather declares that He is ANCIENT. This Hebrew word “ancient” refers to “eons” or “ages.”

With God there is no time. The only way you can note time is when you have something to measure time with. God created instruments of time measurement with the sun, moon, and stars. If God were old, it would mean that He was young once. And that would imply that He has aged over time. But instead, you are told that God is ANCIENT.

If you could somehow measure that God had been young once in the past – and then became old – that would subject God to “the restriction of time.” Instead, He is just ANCIENT. Notice how The Bible refers to time periods as “aonion” or “age lasting.” In fact, many religions identify a “time span” that occurs in an “age-period” as a dispensation.

God has different ages in which to accomplish different things. That is God’s dispensation. At one age, He created the heaven and the earth. In another age, He made it habitable for Adam and Eve. GOD IS ANCIENT BECAUSE HE ALWAYS HAS BEEN, IS TODAY, AND ALWAYS WILL BE.....FOREVER AND EVER. There is no limiting of God in any manner.

GARMENTS OF LIGHT

What type of clothing do you think God wears? God does not run around as in today’s movies – with bare-chested heroes – having disgusting,

sweaty, oily skin. God appears to be very modest. He is so modest that He is clothed down to His feet.

His clothing is **“white as snow.”** It is white for a specific reason. You are seeing God who looks like a human being. As Christ said: **“Just as he was.”** He is made of light, and composed of spirit. God has been around forever – and now you find that He wears garments. These are like garments of light. Notice the text that says: **“And his garment was white as snow, and the hair of his head was like pure wool.”** Does this mean that God has curly or wavy hair?

When a person looks at a herd of sheep and notices their hair, it is wavy isn't it? God's hair could possibly be curly or wavy. The Scriptures confirm it. God just naturally has hair that appears like wool. You now have two more descriptions about how God looks. Is there anything missing? Notice, no mention of a beard.

What comes out from God's presence? Are there fiery flames? God is made of spirit, light, and energy. If you were in front of Him with His wooly hair, there would be all kinds of flames emanating from Him. Daniel 7 says: **“⁹His throne was like the fiery flame, and his wheels as burning fire.”** Notice, how His throne, also, has wheels as burning fire.

Ezekiel 1:4-7 ⁴And I looked, and, behold, a whirlwind came out of the north, a great cloud, and a fire infolding itself, and a brightness was about it, and out of the midst thereof as the colour of amber, out of the midst of the fire. ⁵Also out of the midst thereof came the likeness

of four living creatures. And this was their appearance; they had the likeness of man. ⁶And every one had four faces, and every one had four wings. ⁷And their feet were straight feet; and the sole of their feet was like the sole of a calf's foot: and they sparkled like the colour of burnished brass.

BIBLICAL UFO'S

Continuing with the Ezekiel text, there is a certain type of transporting device for God that some might even describe as an unidentified flying object (UFO). Carefully examine the following account:

Ezekiel 1:27-28 ²⁷And I saw as the colour of amber, as the appearance of fire round about within it, from the appearance of his loins even upward, and from the appearance of his loins even downward, I saw as it were the appearance of fire, and it had brightness round about. ²⁸As the appearance of the bow that is in the cloud of the day of rain, so was the appearance of the brightness round about. This was the appearance of the likeness of the glory of the LORD. And when I saw it, I fell upon my face, and I heard a voice of one that spake.

In Ezekiel 1, you read about The Bible's UFOs. More people get into trouble over UFOs. They write books, start clubs, open tourist areas, and start religions with various UFO beliefs. People spend their time looking for aliens.

Thousands of years ago, God wrote about a type of UFO. Ezekiel was in captivity in Babylon. He disclosed a personal vision about a prophecy that was, yet, to occur. Ezekiel said: “**4And I looked, and, behold, a whirlwind came out of the north.**” What is God like? Could it be like a blast – such as a tornado? Notice the words: “**A great cloud, and fire infolding itself.**”

In this cloud, there was something so energetic that it had hot flames. It was fire – almost as an atomic blast of energy: “**And a brightness was about it, and out of the midst thereof as the colour of amber, out of the midst of the fire.**” So, God looks human-like. He is composed of energy (wind and light) and glowing with an amber color.

Many different colors exude from the brilliance that is radiated by God. This is confirmed in the Greek and Hebrew languages. Some definitions do not specify the exact colors, but God is composed of over 20 different jewel tones. To look upon God, it would appear as if you are looking upon magnificent glowing jewels.

This is an entirely different picture than most have of God. They see amber, and: “**5out of the midst thereof came the likeness of four living creatures.**” This was their appearance. They had the likeness of a man. Then the passage describes four cherubim. The cherubim have four wings, and are part of a wheel within a wheel. According to some interpretations of a UFO, it may have a wheel – and then a wheel within that wheel. This may appear like a supernatural gyroscope.

Ezekiel 1:27 states: **“²⁷I saw as the colour of amber, as the appearance of fire round about within it, from the appearance of his loins even upward.”** From God’s loins upward, the color you see is amber: **“his loins upward”** – which means from roughly about his thighs upward. This is the amber color exuding from God.

In the color spectrum (the rainbow), white is not considered to be a color – since all the colors of the rainbow contain white. So, the greater the intensity of something – a greater degree of energy or heat or light exists. Consequently, it will be brighter – or more ‘white’ will be in it.

When the color spectrum opens up as a rainbow, then the next levels following white are the blues and the violets. As the color spectrum unfolds and the energy becomes less, it goes into the reds and oranges and yellows and then into the bronzes.

THE FACE OF GOD

You will find that the face of God exudes the greatest source of energy. From His head, and especially from His face, it is this whiteness rushing upward from His thighs into the blue hue. A comparison may be with a diamond that contains a sparkle of blue shimmering within.

Imagine bumping into a Being that looks this radiant. It may be shocking for some to realize that God has disclosed so much about Himself: **“The appearance of his loins even downwards, I saw as it were the appearance of fire, and it had brightness round about”** (Ezekiel 1:27).

In other words, such a degree of energy radiates from His Body, that the whole image is entirely a wondrous brightness. It is no wonder that David said: **“All I want to do is sit in the temple of God and look at his beauty?”**

There is another surprise about God's appearance. Remember that from the visible and invisible things of God, you can see His Creation. Those colors are so magnificent, so overpowering, and so delightful – that all you would want to do is to stare at Him in amazement. God is that awesome, that wonderful, and that handsome. Consider also: **“²⁸the appearance of the bow.”** This brightness exuding from Him is like the appearance of the rainbow in the cloud following a day of rain. What type of brightness surrounds God? It is the rainbow from God's light energy.

God's Glory radiates “a rainbow!” Is it any wonder that in Noah's day, God could not have given a better promise than to say He would never again flood the earth? He was giving His Covenant of The Rainbow in the heavens. This promise comes straight from God, and directly from His throne. When you behold God and see the brightness which radiates from him, you see blue, violet, orange, red, yellow – all the brilliant hues with the magnificent colors of the rainbow coming from God.

If you remember the movie The Wizard of Oz, there was a wizard who lived in the enchanted Land of Oz. When they first showed the wizard's throne, it displayed the rainbow. Remember the song, “Somewhere Over The Rainbow?” This wizard (the man-made “god”) in the movie was supposed to be beaming with this brightness and glorious emerald colors of the rainbow. **“²⁸So was the appearance of the brightness round**

about. This was the appearance of the likeness of the glory of the Lord.” In The Bible, how many times do you hear about the statement of: **“The glory of the Lord?”** In the Hebrew language, they call it “shekinah.”

GLORY OF THE LORD

In the days before The Temple was destroyed, The Levitical Priesthood said they heard a voice echoing, “It’s going; it’s going.” This was about the “shekinah” or The Glory of God (all God’s brilliance and power) that was going away. Literally, The Glory (the brilliance and power) was leaving The Temple. When the people entered The Temple before it was destroyed, God’s very presence had been there as His Spirit, His Glory, or “shekinah.” The “Glory of The Lord” means “copious splendor” or all of God’s Power.

When The Bible speaks of The Glory of The Lord, it is talking about a Supreme Being. When something is copious, it is “saturated” – that is “saturated splendor.” It is saturated as with a multitude of jewels. That is The Glory of The Lord.

David knew this, and Job finally came to see it. It is now your turn to know The Glory of The Lord. By going before God in prayer, you will realize the magnificence of God. It is mind-boggling.

Exodus 3:11-14 ¹¹And Moses said unto God, Who am I, that I should go unto Pharaoh, and that I should bring forth the children of Israel out of Egypt? ¹²And He

said, Certainly I will be with thee; and this shall be a token unto thee, that I have sent thee: When thou hast brought forth the people out of Egypt, ye shall serve God upon this mountain. ¹³And Moses said unto God, Behold, when I come unto the children of Israel, and shall say unto them, The God of your fathers hath sent me unto you, and they shall say to me, What is his name? what shall I say unto them? ¹⁴And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and He said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you.

God is called by a particular name. But remember, God has many names. Some are titles telling what He is or what He is doing at a particular time. But God has a specific name, which is difficult to pronounce. In fact, The Israelites were never permitted to pronounce it. This was because that name was so Holy.

Capitalizing on this fact, read the account about the time when Moses was instructed by God to take the children of Israel out of Egypt:

“¹¹and Moses said unto God ‘Who am I, that I should go unto Pharaoh? And that I should bring forth the children of Israel out of Egypt.’ ¹²And He said, ‘Certainly, I will be with thee; and this shall be a token unto thee that I have sent thee. When thou hast brought forth the people out of Egypt, ye shall serve God upon this mountain.’ ¹³And Moses said unto God, ‘Behold,

when I come unto the children of Israel,” “and shall say unto them ‘The God of your fathers has sent me unto you.’” (Exodus 3:11-13)

So they knew The God of the fathers. What they did not know was His name. The name had been revealed to Moses at the burning bush. **“...hath sent me unto you; they shall surely say to me. What is his name? what shall I say unto them?”** ¹⁴**And God said unto Moses, ‘I AM THAT I AM’”** (Exodus 3:13-14).

GREAT NAME OF YHVH

In the Hebrew, only the consonants are used to indicate the Heavenly Father’s name (“YHWH” by some accounts; JHVH by others, and still others YHVH). These four letters are called The Tetragrammaton. The ancient Hebrew had no vowels. So scribes or copyists used diacritical marks just above or below the letters, in order to indicate the vowels. Experts in Jewish law elected to hide this Fourfold Name to ensure it would not be blasphemed.

When the four letters of The Tetragrammaton appeared in the text, scribes would point to it, and substitute vowels for the Hebrew word “adonai” (literally, "lord"), which was in turn read "adonai" rather than the sacred Name "Yahweh." In Hebrew, **“I AM THAT I AM,”** states exactly what God actually is. God said: **“You shall say unto the children of Israel, ‘I AM’ has sent you.”** This name means – **“I am the existing one.”** In Hebrew, it means the “existing one” or the “only existing one.”

This ties in with The Ancient of Days meaning that God always existed; He exists today, and He always will exist. But the name means much more. It means The One who “always exists.” In other words, He is self-life. He is perpetual energy. He needs nothing outside of Himself. He is everything that is. This has a deeper meaning than just saying, “You’re a God” or even the more emphatic “You are The God.” You could use Elohim, which is plural or “more than one” when speaking universally.

This text is speaking about all of his Godliness. It is opposed to, “**I alone as God am the existing one,**” or when he says “**El Shaddai, the almighty one.**” Those are titles, but YHWH (or JHVH) is His name. His name can never apply to anything or any other being – because He is The Only Existing One.

**Exodus 20:1-4 ¹And God spake all these words, saying,
²I am the LORD thy God, which have brought thee out
of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.
³Thou shalt have no other gods before me. ⁴Thou shalt
not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of
any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth
beneath, or that is in the water under the earth:**

Why does God tell you in the second commandment “**not to make any images even of his likeness**”?

IMAGES OF GOD?

Think about the pictures depicting Christ, along with the idols, icons,

statues, or other images that you see representing God and His Son. It is unbelievable. How could anyone ever think of making an image of God? It is unthinkable. It is impossible. God instructs his people not to make images – because it would only be a lie.

The second commandment is powerful: **“You shall make no images of me.”** It should not and cannot be done. When artists try, people begin to worship those false images. A person might say, “I know that is not God, but it makes me think about God.” No, it doesn’t. It doesn’t make anyone think about God, because God doesn’t look anything like those renditions. How powerful that commandment is when you know its TRUE meaning.

Now you understand why that commandment has been placed there for you and all Christians to obey. It is easier to understand The First Commandment when a person says there is one God – and only one God. He is The Only Existing One. He is The One and only One! God is One.

The Books of Job and Proverbs instruct you when God made a decree, all He had to do was to stretch the heavens out as a curtain. That motion in the heavens could have been The Big Bang. It should, now, be more significant than ever. If God didn’t exist, what would happen to the universe? It would be gone. God upholds the whole universe, including everything and everyone in it.

Genesis 5:1-2 ¹This is the book of the generations of Adam. In the day that God created man, in the likeness of God made he him; ²Male and female created he

**them; and blessed them, and called their name Adam,
in the day when they were created.**

As you found earlier in I John, God looks like a human being. Genesis 1 and Genesis 5 tell you that He not only made mankind in His image, and now for more to the story.

MALE & FEMALE

When examining Genesis, you can discern why man and woman become one flesh. In Genesis 5, it states: “**Male and female created he them in His image.**” What does that mean? Even though God is a “male” Being, all the DNA of both the female and the male are in Him. Using the word DNA or genes is to make an attempt to explain this.

Many times women think they are left out of the equation. But they are not overlooked, and are as much a part of God as the male. The ‘light’ substance that is God – is used to compose both male and female. Concerning God’s creative work: “**And he called their name Adam.**” Why did Eve take Adam’s name and not seize upon her own name? This is because God is The Existing One, and He is both male and female – all in one, with all humans belonging to ‘**I Am.**’

Adam was a symbol, or a figure, of Christ. Men are to be one flesh with their wives. That is the express reason why men and women marry, in order to become one flesh. God is One.

Did you realize that the DNA of the female as well as the male is in God? Furthermore, the word “Elohim” or “God’s leading you,” gives an additional piece of the puzzle for you to assemble. It is a beautiful picture with a wonderful message for all mankind.

I John 1:5 This then is the message which you have heard of him and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all.

Now compare the extremes – (1) what God is and (2) what God isn’t. **“⁵This then is the message which you have heard of him and declare unto you, that God is light. And in Him is no darkness at all.”**

You may have seen little gadgets that you can put into the sunlight, which makes the device spin. This is called a radiometer. How can sunlight make that gadget spin? The sun is energy that hits the spindle. There are little white squares. These white squares of the spindle reflect the light. This provides a certain degree of “push.” But there are, also, little black squares on the spindle, and those black squares “absorb the light.”

The white squares move away from the light, but not the black squares. An analogy is that in God, there is no darkness. That is why there are black holes. Black holes can build up energy that can actually swallow up the light. God has no darkness. He is nothing but LIGHT and only LIGHT.

TWO BEINGS

You are presented with “two” major Beings in The Bible. One Being is The Son of The Other. They both look alike. They are both of the same ‘**I Am**’ family. Adam was of that family, because he and his wife were one. The Son and The Father are one, exactly as Adam and Eve were one.

Revelation 1:8 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.

Revelation 1:12-14 ¹²And I turned to see the voice that spake with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks; ¹³And in the midst of the seven candlesticks one like unto the Son of man, clothed with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle. ¹⁴His head and his hairs were white like wool, as white as snow; and his eyes were as flame of fire;

All this becomes the basis for the message which follows: **“I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty”** (Revelation 1:8). In other words, He is what the beginning and the ending are supposed to be.

So whether it is (1) in the beginning or (2) at the end – you are going to see what He is like. **“¹²And I turned to see the voice”** – The Apostle

John turned to see this voice that spoke to him – **“and being turned I saw seven golden candlesticks. And in the midst of the seven candlesticks, one like unto the Son of man.”** Who is this in the middle of the golden candlesticks – is it Jesus Christ? Yes. You will now see what Christ looks like after His Resurrection.

He is: **“¹³...clothed with a garment down to the foot...”** He is fully clothed in a modest manner and wears a belt. **“...and girt about the paps with a golden girdle.”** Notice that – a golden girdle! He must believe in quality. You have already proven that His hair was like wool. But here you see that **“¹⁴...his head and his hairs were white like wool...”** So His hair looks like wool, and it’s of a white color. Why is it white?

WHITE HAIR

The Color “white” carries the whole color spectrum. **“...as white as snow; and his eyes were as a flame of fire....”** Energy is coming right out from God’s eyes. If you looked into His eyes, you would see burning fire like lasers. It would be at an intense temperature that is unknown to man.

His hair is white – but it is not long hair. His face is white (with no beard). There is a time for a man to have long hair – when he is under a vow. God does not live under a vow, so He does not need long hair. God doesn’t break His own “Laws.” Women are directed to have long hair because they are under the authority of their husbands. Men should not have long hair, as they should follow God’s admonition to look like He appears.

I Corinthians 11:7-15 ⁷For a man indeed ought not to cover his head, forasmuch as he is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man. ⁸For the man is not of the woman; but the woman of the man. ⁹Neither was the man created for the woman; but the woman for the man. ¹⁰For this cause ought the woman to have power on her head because of the angels. ¹¹Nevertheless neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the LORD. ¹²For as the woman is of the man, even so is the man also by the woman; but all things of God. ¹³Judge in yourselves: is it comely that a woman pray unto God uncovered? ¹⁴Doth not even nature itself teach you, that, if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him? ¹⁵But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her: for her hair is given her for a covering.

The Apostle Paul reiterated the same information in I Corinthians 11:7-15. God is a male even though the female strain is within him. There is no long hair, no beard, and He is not old – but ANCIENT. Isn't this a completely different picture of The God, who is your Father?

Revelation 1:15-16 ¹⁵And his feet like unto fine brass, as if they burned in a furnace; and his voice as the sound of many waters. ¹⁶And he had in his right hand seven stars: and out of his mouth went a sharp two-

**edged sword: and his countenance was as the sun
shineth in his strength.**

Going one step further in: “¹⁵...**And his feet like unto fine brass....**”
The face is the peak source of His energy (His brain). White is the intensity that is somewhat like the sun. The lower part is amber. Going down to His feet (burnished brass), there is less energy.

THE 20 GEMSTONES

There are 20 gems in New Jerusalem. So if you were looking at God, He would be in a multi-glowing, colorful state. Some might ask: “What race is God?” The answer to that is: “He is a combination of all the races!”
“¹⁶**And He had in his right hand seven stars,** [You will see later how these seven stars are angels] **And out of his mouth went a sharp two-edged sword and his countenance** [his appearance] **was as the sun shineth in His strength.**” This is The Son. The Father looks exactly the same.

Revelations 5:2-7 ²**And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof?** ³**And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon.** ⁴**And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon.** ⁵**And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Juda, the Root of David, hath prevailed to**

open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.
⁶And I beheld, and, lo, in the midst of the throne, and of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth. ⁷And he came and took the book out of the right hand of him that sat upon the throne.

Revelation 5 contains the account of the book with the seven seals, which no man was able to open. The book states that John began to cry. And the angel told him, "Don't worry, there is one here: **"²Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof?"**"

Revelations 4:2-4 ²And immediately I was in the spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in heaven, and one sat on the throne. ³And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald. ⁴And round about the throne were four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

In Revelation 4: **"²...And immediately, I was in the spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in Heaven and one sat on the throne. ³And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald."**

GREAT EMERALD THRONE

There is a great emerald rainbow about the head, and the whole color spectrum of brightness radiates from His Body. To see who this is, read Revelation 5:4:

⁴And round about the throne were the four and twenty seats and upon the seats are twenty-four elders sitting. And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon. ⁵And one of the elders saith unto me, ‘Weep not: behold, the lion of the tribe of Juda, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.’ ⁶And I beheld, and, lo, in the midst of the throne.

The Father’s throne had a sardine stone with a jasper and emerald rainbow above His Head. Continuing:

⁶...and of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders, stood a lamb [speaking of Christ] as it had been slain, having seven heads and seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven spirits of God sent forth into all the earth. ⁷And he came and took the book out of the right hand of him that sat upon the throne.

Jesus as The Slain Lamb went to The Father and received the book to open it. In Revelation 4 and 5, The Father was sitting on the throne. He looks

the same as Jesus in Revelation 1. Jesus and The Father not only look like human beings in Their Glory, they LOOK LIKE EACH OTHER, as members of One family – GOD'S FAMILY. This is who and what God looks like. His name is '**I Am,**' and He looks like a human being.

RADIANT FULLNESS

God is composed of Spirit – which can also be perceived as a super powerful Light. His body glistens like jewels that have the appearance of changing colors. The brightness surrounding Him gives off the colors of the rainbow. This is what your God and my God looks like. HE IS THE ONE AND ONLY GOD. These comparisons, also, include the electromagnetic powers that science is beginning to discover. These breathtaking revelations have been a part of The Biblical record for thousands of years!

In summary, God is composed of perpetual energy just like the wind. Primarily, He is composed of photons, or LIGHT. He is ANCIENT, never old. He is not wrinkled, and has a continuous glorious glowing of gem-like colors radiating from Him as a rainbow. His garments are changeable at His command. His face is white, full of energy, and His hair is a brilliant white radiance that contains the entire color spectrum.

Consider that His hair is short – and may be curly (wavy) as wool. He has no beard. Proceeding down His body, His color is blue, violet, and becoming like burnished brass at His legs. The brilliance from His body surrounds Him like the colors of a rainbow – and the emerald color above

His head. His name is, **“I AM, YHWH (JHVH), THE EXISTING ONE.”**

Job and David talked about who God was, and what He looked like; now you know more of who God is – and what He looks like.

CHAPTER 4

GOD'S CHARACTER AND PERSONALITY

When you diligently study all that is in The Bible, you find your God is an awesome Being. He is a God composed of SPIRIT, WIND, and LIGHT. Now, you are ready to learn what His character is like – and what type of personality He has. You will learn about God's basic nature – and how He thinks. You will see how He reacts to various situations, and the full meanings and definitions of His names or titles. You will not only understand God, but you will finally comprehend His Great Plan for the billions of individuals He has created.

WHAT'S IN A NAME?

When a child is born, parents spend a considerable amount of time choosing the right name for the infant. They carefully consider each of the

meanings of the different names. God, also, is very selective when He chooses names for His children.

Beginning with Adam, the very first man, God chose the appropriate name. In Hebrew, the name Adam means “red earth” – because he was created from red earth. Eve came out of Adam's body. Eve means “mother of all Creation or life.” God named them for what they were. God describe titles or names of what a particular person is – or represents.

Genesis 1:26 And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.

Another example is when David married Abigail. Originally, she was married to Nabal, who was killed because he acted unwisely. Nabal's name means “fool.” Although Abigail was an honorable woman, she married a fool. She learned from her mistake because, later, she became the wife of David.

So it is with God's various titles or names. There are two ways you can find the meaning of His names. The first method is by reading the context. When a specific name for God is mentioned, it is used in reference to what He is talking about. You must discern the context in which God's title (name) is used. Keep in mind, God has many powers and abilities. In carrying out His various PURPOSES, He specifies what they mean through His various titles or names.

TO REALLY KNOW GOD

If you really want to know as much as you can about God, He has left all the pieces of His puzzle for you to assemble. In order to understand His various titles or names through the context of a given subject, you must be a good detective in compiling all the facts. The second method is to go to the Hebrew in The Old Testament and to the Greek in The New Testament in order to obtain THE TRUE MEANING of particular or key words that are used in the translation of The King James Version.

A greater understanding comes through the true meanings of God's various titles or names. In The Old Testament there are seven basic designations used for God. However, only two names have been translated or used in The Old and New Testaments for all these seven titles.

The translation uses only two names: God or Lord. Nevertheless, there are seven different and meaningful titles that are used when God's name is mentioned. The meanings of these seven different titles or names tell you what He is really like – and which fully explain His Plan.

ELOHIM

Genesis 1:26 is a famous verse. Here the true meaning for God is distinct, explanatory, and carries a great meaning. ²⁶**And God said....**” The word God in the Hebrew comes from “Elohim.” “El,” in Hebrew, means “mighty.”

When you see El, it conveys God as “mighty.” But the word “Elohim” is a plural word, which translates to “manifesting a multiplicity” or “plurality of God.” Elohim can, also, mean “angels,” “elders,” or “judges.”

Christians get confused with this meaning and come up with two or three gods – hence the more common “trinity.” But the name Elohim carries a far bigger connotation than referring to separate individuals. The verse in question goes on to say: “²⁶**And God said, Let us make man in our image.**” To whom is He talking?

The Bible tells you that in the beginning The Word was with God, and The Word was God. Does this mean that God and Christ were sitting down, and having a serious talk together? That may seem logical – however, in this verse, He was referring to many more beings than just two beings having a conversation between themselves.

How many other entities look like God and The Word? Perhaps the 24 elders? Note: The word “image” not only means “shadow,” or “not quite real,” but also a “phantom.” When God said, “**to make man in our image,**” He created this shadow to look like a human. (Note: this is very different from where Christ is a “stamped impress” of The Father as mentioned in Hebrews 1.)

God, as ELOHIM, could well include 24 ELDERS, and also, perhaps, THE ANGELS. This conversation was about creating others who resembled God, or who were made in God's image. When God stated, “**Let us,**” He was talking about THE GODHEAD. He was making man

as a “phantom” or an image, giving him the responsibility to be placed over everything He had created on the earth.

Genesis 2:18 And the Lord God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help mate for him.

In Genesis you learn what Elohim is thinking about. **“And the Lord God.”** Translated from the Hebrew, this is “Adoni Elohim.” (Adoni’s name will be explained later, which will add a greater meaning than Master.) ¹⁸**“And the Lord God [or The Master Elohim] said it is not good that man should be alone;...”** This gives you a little insight into how God thinks. He said it is not good for those who are made in His image “to be alone.”

A FEMALE HELPER

Realize that God is good and that He had a specific reason for not wanting Adam to be alone. His intent was always to procreate Himself. When He said it is not good for man to be alone, God was allowing you to know His thoughts. He was telling you something very important – **“That the man should not be alone, I will make him a help mate for him.”**

God believes not only in reproducing Himself, but extends that reproduction power to those who have been created in His image. Then they will have the same kind of reproduction as He does. This is a fantastic and precious gift. It is The Gift To Create Life.

Genesis 2:21-24 ²¹And the Lord God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept; and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; ²²And the rib, which the Lord God had taken from man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man. ²³And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. ²⁴Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.

This is God's thinking. God did this. This wasn't Adam. In God's terms, you cannot reproduce better than by duplicating what has come out of The One who has brought you into being. God tells this in the next verse: **“²⁴Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife; and they shall be one flesh.”**

God is One. You are becoming One with God. God says it is not good for a being to dwell alone. He says a man should have a helpmate. The best way to accomplish this it is to reproduce yourself with the same genes. You could call it Spiritual DNA, which might be a good term.

MOTHER OF ALL CREATION

Since Eve is the mother of all creation, and Adam was the first type of Christ, then Adam could have been The Savior. Eve, being his wife, and mother of all future children, would have been compared to The Church.

Adam would have ended up being Christ – or The Savior of The World. This was an opportunity he was given. But Adam failed to qualify.

After Adam failed, another seed had to come who was Jesus Christ in the flesh. He came to fulfill the role of The Savior. Then, there needed to be a helpmate for The Savior, which is The Church. All of this is embodied in The Title, Elohim. The word, Elohim, shows a plurality of reproducing Himself in all of His Creation (I Corinthians 15:28).

This title, Elohim, manifests God as reproducing Himself. Adam, along with his helpmate (Eve), could have been “the saviors of the world.” Adam would have been The Savior – and Eve would have been The Mother of The Whole World. This is a very large concept to embrace, but it is a critical message that comes through many Scriptures in The Bible.

GOD, ABRAHAM, & COVENANTS

Genesis 17:3-7 ³And Abram fell on his face: and God talked with him, saying, ⁴As for me, behold, my covenant is with thee, and thou shalt be a father of many nations. ⁵Neither shall thy name any more be called Abram, but thy name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made thee. ⁶And I will make thee exceeding fruitful, and I will make nations of thee and kings shall come out of thee. ⁷And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting

covenant, to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee.

A Covenant had to be reintroduced so everything could be done in a proper way: **“³And Abram fell on his face: and God talked with him, saying, ⁴As for me, behold, my covenant is with thee, and thou shalt be a father of many nations.”** The Hebrew word “Elohiym” breaks down in the following way: “El” means “mighty” and “hiym” means “plural” – or a “love covenanting” God. All this means is “God in Covenant.”

Elohim not only means plural (many), but, also, means that He enters into “Covenants” or “Agreements.” The title Elohim encompasses “mighty,” “plural,” or “love covenanting.” It, also, means “entering into an agreement” with Abraham – through whom The Promise Seed would come – which is The Promise of Christ. Notice, there is no Israel or Chosen People at this time.

God speaks as Elohim, communicating to the whole world. **“⁵Neither shall thy name any more be called Abram, but thy name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made thee. ⁶And I will make thee exceeding fruitful, and I will make nations of thee, and kings shall come out of thee. ⁷And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting [age lasting] covenant [agreement], to be a God [Elohim] unto thee, and to thy seed after thee.”** When God uses the name Elohim, He uses it in reference to the universe – or to the entire creation. God will be “all and in all.”

Ephesians 3:9-15 ⁹And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ: ¹⁰To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God, ¹¹According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord; ¹²In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him. ¹³Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory. ¹⁴For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, ¹⁵Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named.

When explaining Paul's responsibility, He says: **"⁹And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world."**

This mystery started from the beginning of the world, with Adam and Eve under Elohim. Paul said: **"...hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ [The Word]: ¹⁰To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God."**

THE ETERNAL PURPOSE

WHEN GOD REVEALS WHO HE IS, WHAT HE IS, AND HOW HE THINKS, HE IS GIVING YOU HIS WISDOM: **"¹¹According to the**

eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord: ¹²In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him. ¹³Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulation for you, which is your glory. ¹⁴For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, ¹⁵Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named.”

The Greek word for “family” is “Patria,” “Our Father.” As you can see, when God said, “**Let us make man in our image,**” He was talking to a large number of beings. He is referring to his future PURPOSE or PLAN. Elohim refers to God’s objective to create a Universal Family – Sons of God – to complete His work according to His Word. God, will then, be “all and in all.”

Hebrews 10:1 For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect.

Everything in The Law is a shadow – which gives the basic instructions about Christ and The Father. In Romans, Paul explains that “the invisible things” of God are perceived in “the physical elements” which a person can observe in the world.

Romans 1:20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse:

God is, Elohim, in everyone. So the name “Elohim” means God “is all” and “in all.” It is plural in Purpose. God is in all – and He is all encompassing. When He uses His title Elohim, He is talking about everything He created.

EVERYTHING IN HEAVEN & EARTH

That is why Paul said: “**Everything that is named in Heaven and in Earth is named after this name.**” Rightly so, since He created everything, and He upholds everything that is. If He didn't uphold all the things that exist, then, where would you be? No one would be here.

Whenever God uses the title Elohim, He is talking about His completeness as God. God is All. The plural God, or the all-encompassing God, is a Godhead for whom the entire Heaven and Earth are named. Everywhere in The Old Testament, Elohim is speaking in the “universal” sense.

This is the reason He made The Covenant with Abraham. It was a Universal Covenant. It was covering all nations through The One Seed (I Corinthians 15:22), which was going to come through Abraham. That was The Promise. So God's “thought processes” consist of the concept that He knows it is not good for man to be alone – so God is reproducing Himself.

When they accused Christ of calling Himself The Son of God, Jesus said, “**Aren't you called gods?**” (John 10:34). They all came from God. Paul said that The Word was with God and The Word was God. Everything is God. There remains just one God – regardless of the 24 elders. This is all in The Godhead (God is all). Each time God speaks universally, He uses

His title or name, Elohim as “possessor,” “maker,” and “creator of all.” This is how God thinks. Therefore, all of God's titles and names tell you exactly what He is like or what He is doing at a designated time.

YHWH (JHVH) – THE RIGHTEOUS GOD

Exodus 3:14 And God said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you.

The name YHWH (JHVH) causes a considerable degree of trouble for some individuals. Frankly, many people create various religious beliefs out of what they think this means. YHWH (JHVH) means “the existing one” – or the “**I Am that I Am.**” Some people think that you should only use this particular name to address God as The Existing One – “**I Am that I Am.**” But, this is not true.

God has many titles (names) because He has many powers. He used “**I Am that I Am**” for Israel. In Exodus 3:14, Moses was attempting to back out of the job God assigned to him. God said, “I want you to go and set My people free. Go talk to Pharaoh.”

Moses said, “**I can't even talk.**” Then Moses asks: “**Who shall I say sent me?**” The “One” who will send Moses is the same God as Elohim – only this time God is focusing upon a nation with a specific “Purpose” in mind.

God is not speaking here in a universal sense – or about all of humanity. He is referring to a nation that will perform a task according to His will. He is dealing with Israel, personally, as their God. That is why He used a different name. “¹⁴...**And God [Elohim] said unto Moses, I AM THAT I AM:**” (YHWH or JHVH).

UNKNOWN PRONUNCIATION

No one knows the pronunciation of this name because no vowels exist – only consonants. “**And he said, Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you.**” Now what did He want them to do?

Exodus 3:18 And they shall hearken to thy voice: and thou shalt come, thou and the elders of Israel, unto the king of Egypt, and ye shall say unto him, The Lord God of the Hebrews hath met with us: and now let us go, we beseech thee, three days' journey into the wilderness, that we may sacrifice to the Lord our God.

The reason God wanted the children of Israel to come out of Egypt was for them to begin sacrificing to Him. At this time, He was playing a totally different role. What type of role was it?

To find out, you need to examine the root of the word “JHVH” or “YHWH.” It means “righteous,” “just” and “judgmental.” This is the most common image that Christians have about God when they read The

Old Testament. You have a very black-and-white type of God, with “sinners” on one side, and “the righteous” on the other side.

SUDDEN IDOLATRY

What was the first occurrence that took place when Moses went to Mt. Sinai to receive The Ten Commandments? He returned to discover that the children of Israel had turned to gross idolatry. They had created the golden calf – and were having a big party.

What did God intend to do? He was going to kill them. This is JHVH (YHWH). This is God revealing Himself as Perfect or Perfection or WITHOUT SIN. In all this, He is totally Righteous.

God has complete free choice, and by that choice He decides to be Righteous, never making mistakes. He always makes the right decision, and if anyone sins, “just punishment” must be given. This is the God that Israel knew, firsthand. JHVH (YHWH) is “judgmental” and “just.” Sinners are always punished. In The Law, which God gave to Israel, it was a Concept of Choice – whether good or evil (Deuteronomy 30:19).

Later, David and The Prophets would begin to understand this mercy. Israel never understood God's forgiveness, because they never would REPENT. ALL THEY SAW WAS THIS RIGHTEOUS, POWERFUL, JUDGMENTAL, AND JUST GOD.

To Israel, God was “a fearful Being.” In fact, because of their fear, they didn't want Him to speak to them. God said that He had chosen to be this

way because “I AM WHAT I AM,” or “I AM THAT I AM.” You are, now, beginning to see the different characteristic parts of God. It is more than Elohim, who says it is not good for man to be alone. This is a God who wants to give of Himself, as a Creator.

JHVH (YHWH) is a different side of God. It is a God who demands Perfection because God, Himself, is Perfect. But, God is, also, giving you the opportunity to become as excellent as He is. On the other hand, if you stepped in the wrong direction, you would be required to pay the consequences. This is The God of Blessings and Cursings (Deuteronomy 30).

This is The God of Israel. Israel was to be a witness of what God is to all the nations – just as The Church should be a witness for Christ. The Church should be Perfect – just as God is Perfect (Matthew 5:48). You will find that God's name as Your Father has a different connotation from the “I Am That I Am.” That is a vital factor to consider.

TWO DIFFERENT APPROACHES

There are two different approaches about God that you should consider. The approach is spit and polish, right down the line. It leaves no margin for error. The other approach is the characteristic of being easy to entreat. He is The God who will listen to you, personally. This is another manifestation of the character and personality of God.

The reason that God was found to be in the role of the “I AM THAT I AM” for Israel – was to set an example of His goodness. So, He gave

them The Law. God did this because The Israelites did not know right from wrong – and were unrepentant (I Timothy 1:9-10).

The Law told them what sin was, so they would know what to do – and what not to do. God said The Law was to be Israel's "righteousness" (Deuteronomy 6:25). He explained that if they would keep His Commandments, Statutes, and Ordinances, then, they would be a blessing to all nations. This would, also, be a way of setting an example for all the other nations.

The Israelites were to make God's name known. What name? It is JHVH (YHWH). As you go through all the various meanings of God's seven different titles and names, and have more of an understanding of The Law, it will help you immensely as you read Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, and Deuteronomy. You will understand each of God's titles and names explain all the aspects of God's Plans.

John 14:6 Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.

Thomas asked Jesus to show him The Way. **“⁶Jesus saith unto him, ‘I am the way,’”** Understand that Christianity is not a religion – It is A Way of Life. The works of The Law do not apply to Christians, because it would make this new way of life into a religion or ritual – which only points to God in Christ. There is a big difference!

Jesus said: **“I am the way.”** Remember, in John 6:29 that He said: **“This**

is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.” And Christ said, **“I am the way.”** Christ was saying that you must live as He lived and be like Him. Don't hate anyone. Don't covet that which belongs to someone else. Just be kind to everyone.

If someone needs a coat, give him a coat. If you don't have one, or can't afford to buy him one, then ask a relative, a friend, or a neighbor if they have a spare coat. That is Christianity at work.

Jesus literally tells you that He is The Truth (this is no lie). He is The Way for Christians to follow. Following Christ, as The Truth, is The Best and Only Way to Live. There is no other way for Christians to learn PERFECTION. No man comes unto The Father but by Christ. You now know the significance of JHVH (YHWH). “I AM WHAT I AM.” He is your Supreme example.

EL SHADDAI

As discussed, “El” alone means “mighty.” Followers of Islam call God “Allah” or “El” or “The Mighty One.” But the full title is El Shaddai. “Shaddai” in Hebrew means, “the breast,” or “nurturing.” It signifies pouring out like a mother who takes the child to her breast, and nourishes the child.

Shaddai is a nurturing, loving mother. You will find that whenever the title El Shaddai is used – there is a mighty God who is giving, nourishing, and pouring out. So, El Shaddai means “powerful,” “nourishing,” and

“giving.” It is a “mighty Giver who can give everything that He has” – and is.

Genesis 14:18-23 ¹⁸And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine: and he was the priest of the most high God. ¹⁹ And he blessed him, and said, Blessed be Abram of the most high God, possessor of heaven and earth: ²⁰And blessed be the most high God, which hath delivered thine enemies into thy hand. And he gave him tithes of all. ²¹And, the king of Sodom said unto Abram, Give me the persons, and take the goods to thyself. ²²And Abram said to the king of Sodom, I have lift up mine hand unto the Lord, the most high God, the possessor of heaven and earth. ²³That I will not take from a thread even to a shoelatchet, and that I will not take any thing that is thine, lest thou shouldest say, I have made Abram rich:

No human words in any language can fully describe God. Take the case where Abraham met Melchizedek, The High Priest. Why was Melchizedek, a High Priest, at that time? He was High Priest over all humanity – but especially for those who called upon The Name of The Lord.

The purpose of a priest is to intercede for the sins of others. Notice, in Genesis: “¹⁸And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine [a likeness to Passover service]: And he was the priest....” Melchizedek was The Priest of El Elyon, the “giver,” the “nurturer,” or

“giving of blessings.” El Elyon is The God who prospers you. This is a powerful example of that fact.

“El Shaddai” is translated in the English as “The Most High God,” “The Almighty Giver,” or “provider who blessed Abram.” And, Melchizedek **“¹⁹blessed him, and said, Blessed be Abram of the most high God, [El Shaddai] possessor of heaven and earth....”**

Here is El Elyon, The Nurturer, having in His dominion all the heavens, and the whole earth. From this powerful position – He was blessing Abraham.

This nurturing God made Abraham rich. This is the reason why Abraham and Melchizedek met. They met for a much greater reason than you might have thought. **“²⁰And blessed be the most high God [El Shaddai], which hath delivered thine enemies into thy hand. And he gave him tithes of all.”**

WHY TITHE TO MELCHIZEDEK?

Why did Abraham tithe to Melchizedek? Perhaps it was a Law. But, no Law was given for another 430 years! Remember, the name of El Elyon means The One who gives all the blessings, and who pours forth all His goodness. He, also, nurtures His Creation. Everything comes from El Shaddai. The Mighty El Shaddai is the possessor of heaven and earth.

Now, it says that Abraham gave tithes. He is going to tell you why he tithed to Melchizedek. It has nothing to do with The Law. **“²¹And the**

king of Sodom said unto Abram, Give me the persons, and take the goods to thyself.” You have to understand this first point.

The King of Sodom asked permission to keep his people – so he could still retain his kingdom. He said to take everything, which includes all the material wealth, the riches, the blessings, the food, the cattle, and the produce. What was Abraham's reply? When you are tithing to Levi, you are left with 90%; so this was done because of The Law of tithing.

If Abraham kept The Law of tithing, he should have kept the remainder of the spoils. **“²²And Abram said to the king of Sodom, I have lift up mine hand unto the Lord, the most high God [El Shaddai], the possessor of heaven and earth [God has everything]. ²³That I will not take from a thread even to a shoelatchet, and that I will not take any thing that is thine, lest thou shouldest say, I have made Abram rich:”**

The reason Abraham gave a tithe to Melchizedek was to show that he recognized God was El Elyon, “The Giver of All Blessings.” Abraham tithed to show El Shaddai that His God prospered him, and would continue to prosper him.

God will do the same for you. God wants to give everything to His Creation. And, El Shaddai was The One who made Abraham rich. That is why he tithed. This is the true meaning which is based on The Scriptures.

When Jacob had his dream, God was revealing the same lesson. Jacob was running away from his brother – and was scared to death. He had nothing, so he negotiated with God, by asking God to protect him – and

bring him back home, safely. Jacob knew that God was El Shaddai. So he said the same thing that Abraham said: "I'll give you a tithe."

In other words, Jacob understood that God was The Blessor of all. God is El Shaddai, The Protector, and The God who prospered Jacob. God's nature, personality, and character only want to give. God desires to "Give" all that He is and has. God is Agapè! This is Charity. He can do nothing but "Give." How much does God "Give?" HE WANTS TO "GIVE" HIS CREATION EVRYTHING HE HAS.

Have you ever heard of spoiling your children or grandchildren? This is just a little of the "substance of God" in you. Who can say "No" to a grandchild when the gifts would not be harmful? Well, God can't resist either.

Christ says that if you ask for bread, will your Father give you a stone? How much more would your Heavenly Father, who is good, give you than your earthly fathers – who are but a combination of good and evil?

El Shaddai shows His character and personality. He can't keep from GIVING. There is only one difference between God and mankind. God is good and righteous all the time – and mankind is not.

God says that if you are not good, then He will discipline. God is just and humans are not. God is fair but humans are not. God is not prejudiced – but humans are. God does not discriminate – yet humans are prone to discriminate. God is much greater than anyone could ever imagine.

ELYON

Genesis 17:5 Neither shall thy name any more be called Abram, but thy name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made thee.

Another title for God is “Elyon.” God blessed Abraham because he was The Father of all nations. God’s titles interchange at different times. When you read Genesis 14:18, you will find that He is not only “El Shaddai” – but He is “Elyon” as well. This shows you that God is a Gift-giver, in addition to the other characteristics.

“Elyon” literally means “gifts” – and “Elyon” possesses all the heavens and all the earth. Wherever the word “Elyon” is used, it means “gifts from the highest.” Elyon owns everything, and is willing to give to His Creation. Everything God gives is a “Gift.” You cannot earn nor do you deserve it. IT ALL COMES FROM GOD, “ELYON,” THE GIFT GIVER.

EL OLAM

Genesis 21:10-14 ¹⁰Wherefore she said unto Abraham, Cast out this bondwoman and her son: for the son of this bondwoman shall not be heir with my son, even with Isaac. ¹¹And the thing was very grievous in Abraham's sight because of his son. ¹²And God said unto Abraham, Let it not be grievous in thy sight

because of the lad, and because of thy bondwoman; in all that Sarah hath said unto thee, hearken unto her voice; for in Isaac shall thy seed be called. ¹³And also of the son of the bondwoman will I make a nation, because he is thy seed. ¹⁴And Abraham rose up early in the morning, and took bread, and a bottle of water, and gave it unto Hagar, putting it on her shoulder, and the child, and sent her away: and she departed, and wandered in the wilderness of Beer-sheba.

Another title for God – “El Olam” – is a very significant one, which involves The Jubilee Year. This title for God explains that He is A Covenant Keeper. Abraham is talking about Hagar and Ishmael. **“¹⁰Wherefore she [Sarah] said unto Abraham, cast out this bondwoman and her son: for the son of this bondwoman shall not be heir with my son, even with Isaac.”**

El Olam is “inheritance” – “inheritor,” or “age lasting God.” It, also, means “A Covenant Keeper.” **“¹¹And the thing was very grievous in Abraham’s sight because of his son. ¹²And God said unto Abraham, Let it not be grievous in thy sight because of the lad, and because of thy bondwoman; in all that Sarah hath said unto thee, hearken unto her voice; for in Isaac shall thy seed be called.”**

HAGAR’S FATE

The Law of Inheritance had to go to the first-born seed of the wife. But, in this case, it was the bondwoman who bore the child for Abraham. So the

child Ishmael did not have “a right” to The Inheritance. This is why God sent Hagar and Ishmael away. **“¹³And also of the son of the bondwoman will I make a nation, because he is thy seed.”**

Remember, that in Genesis 17, He (God) was “Elohim.” He covered everyone universally, though Ishmael's seed didn't deserve The Inheritance – because he wasn't born of the true wife. But, God still followed through with His Promise that He would, also, make a nation out of Ishmael, and kings would come from his lineage.

So, God took care of Ishmael: **“¹⁴And Abraham rose up early in the morning, and took bread, and a bottle of water, and gave it unto Hagar, putting it on her shoulder, and the child, and sent her away: and she departed, and wandered in the wilderness of Beersheba.”**

Hagar finally got to the place where she and her son were going to die of thirst and hunger: **“¹⁷And God heard the voice of the lad; and the angel of God called to Hagar out of heaven, and said unto her [don't fear], for God hath heard the voice of the lad.”** Then, God provided Hagar with a pool of water to drink.

Genesis 21:33 is the account where Abimelech recognized that God blessed Abraham, just as He blessed Ishmael who was the son of a bondwoman. **“³³And Abraham planted a grove in Beer-sheba, and called there on the name of the Lord, the everlasting God....”**

This is El Olam or the “age-lasting” God of The Covenant Keeper of Inheritance. God's Inheritance lasts forever! This subject matter is

beginning to illustrate how “El Olam” was The One God who gives what He has – and never takes back any of The Inheritance He has promised. He keeps His Promises. You can always count on Him.

God does not lie. This is another part of God's personality. God's personality reveals that He always lives up to His Word. In fact, His Word is forever. He is The Word. Your Father is a “continuously giving God.” God's “giving” comes from an Inheritance that is given directly by God.

ADONAI

Ezekiel 16:1-10: ¹Again the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, ²Son of man, cause Jerusalem to know her abominations, ³And say, Thus saith the Lord God unto Jerusalem; Thy birth and thy nativity is of the land of Canaan; thy father was an Amorite, and thy mother an Hittite. ⁴And as for thy nativity, in the day thou wast born thy navel was not cut, neither wast thou washed in water to supple thee; thou wast not salted at all, nor swaddled at all. ⁵None eye pitied thee, to do any of these unto thee, to have compassion upon thee; but thou wast cast out in the open field, to the loathing of thy person, in the day that thou wast born. ⁶And when I passed by thee, and saw thee polluted in thine own blood, I said unto thee when thou wast in thy blood, Live; yea, I said unto thee when thou wast in thy blood,

Live. ⁷I have caused thee to multiply as the bud of the field, and thou hast increased and waxen great, and thou art come to excellent ornaments: thy breasts are fashioned, and thine hair is grown, whereas thou wast naked and bare. ⁸Now when I passed by thee, and looked upon thee, behold, thy time was the time of love; and I spread my skirt over thee, and covered thy nakedness: yea, I swore unto thee, and entered into a covenant with thee, saith the Lord God, and thou becamest mine. ⁹Then washed I thee with water, yea, I thoroughly washed away thy blood from thee, and I anointed thee with oil. ¹⁰I clothed thee also with broidered work, and shod thee with badgers' skin, and I girded thee about with fine linen, and I covered thee with silk.

PROBING DEEPER

Let's probe into a more comprehensive and significant relationship with "Adonai," which is another of God's titles. Adonai is translated as "Lord" or "Master." Every time you read the words "Lord God," it means "The Master God" – although the word Master carries a greater significance. This is a vital perspective.

There are many times when the word "Master" or "Adonai" is used in various texts. It appears when referring to human beings as masters. It

carries a different connotation than just God. The meaning is “a being in charge of,” “responsible for,” or “over someone.”

Now, to an astounding reality of what “Adonai” really means. This is especially true when explaining the responsibilities that each husband must have.

A RUNNING COMMENTARY

“¹Again the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, ²Son of man, cause Jerusalem to know her abominations [He is talking about The City of Jerusalem], ³And say, Thus saith the Lord God unto Jerusalem; Thy birth and thy nativity is of the land of Canaan [Canaan was the place where The Jebusites dwelled, a nothing place]; Thy father was an Amorite and thy mother an Hittite. ⁴And as for thy nativity, in the day thou wast born thy navel was not cut [just left to bleed, and nobody paid attention to Jerusalem at all]. ...neither wast thou washed in water to supple thee; thou wast not salted at all, nor swaddled at all [They used to tie up a child in swaddling clothes to keep their bones together so the child would get rigid or come together.]. ⁵None eye pitied thee, to do any of these unto thee, to have compassion upon thee [no one cared]; But thou wast cast out in the open field, to the loathing of thy person, in the day that thou wast born [when Jerusalem started]. ⁶And when I passed by thee, and saw thee polluted in thine own blood [dying as a city and becoming a ghost town]. ⁷I said unto thee when thou wast in thy blood, Live; yea, I said unto thee when thou wast in thy blood, Live.” [beginning to restore her]. I have caused thee to multiply as the

bud of the field [beginning to flourish], **and thou hast increased and waxen great....** [in Solomon's time, it was known all over the world as God's place]. **And thou art come to excellent ornaments** [describing a bride, or talking about a wife]. **Thy breasts are fashioned, and thine hair is grown, whereas thou wast naked and bare.** ⁸**Now when I passed by thee, and looked upon thee, behold, thy time was the time of love; and I spread my skirt over thee, and covered thy nakedness: yea, I swear unto thee, and entered into a covenant with thee, saith the Lord God, [your Adonai, God] and thou becamest mine.** ⁹**Then washed I thee with water, yea, I thoroughly washed away thy blood from thee, and I anointed thee with oil.** ¹⁰**I clothed thee also with broidered work and shod thee with badgers' skin, and I girded thee about with fine linen, and I covered thee with silk."** For a more in depth perspective, read Ephesians 5:26-27. What is the responsibility of the husband? The husband provides for the wife's needs.

MASTER & SLAVE RELATIONSHIP

This is a good time to explain the Master/slave relationships. God's idea of slavery is to make the slave better by teaching him to be self-sufficient. On the other hand, man's idea of slavery is to take advantage of the slave. Do you see the vital difference? A Christian is a "duloss" or "slave" of Christ, and as Christians, you are destined to become The Bride of Christ.

Christ will prepare you so that you are without blemish or wrinkles. He wants you to become Holy and Perfect. The husband's job is to be the

head of the wife. As "Adonai," or God, He is your Head (through Christ). He is Lord, or Master, or Husband of The Church (The Bride).

When you read The Laws of slavery in The Book of The Law, a Hebrew was to be a slave for only six years. When The Seventh Year came, he was SET FREE. God's type of slavery is to have the master take charge, train the person who went into slavery for six years, after which he should have learned from his mistakes and be able to take care of himself and family. In the 7th year he should be able to make it on his own.

A husband's job is to make the wife and family prosperous. He should make them happy, and thankful. Even slavery between master and slave is a positive relationship that should improve the slave. How much greater is a man's responsibility to a wife and family – than that of a slave!

The whole Book of Philemon deals with Onesimus and slavery. Paul says, **"I am sending Onesimus to you who was once unprofitable for you, but now is not only profitable to you, but to me and everyone. If he owes you anything, lay it to my charge."**

Adonai, the title that denotes one of God's character traits, takes the leadership over you. He becomes responsible for you, and you submit as a wife – indeed, as The Church. He leads you to PERFECTION. The name Adonai carries the distinction as a master who serves those under him.

Never forget the difference between God's form of government and man's methods of government. Those under man's methods of government always find that the rulers are those who rule over others – and want to get

all the benefits. Those in God's way of government are in charge to perform the caring, and all the giving. That is the full meaning of Adonai. Your Master, God, becomes One with you in Christ, and you are married to Christ.

JHVH – SABOATH

Malachi 3:13-17 ¹³Your words have been stout against me, saith the Lord. Yet ye say, What have we spoken so much against thee? ¹⁴Ye have said, It is vain to serve God: and what profit is it that we have kept his ordinance, and that we have walked mournfully before the Lord of hosts? ¹⁵And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered. ¹⁶Then they that feared the Lord spake often one to another: and the Lord hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the Lord, and that thought upon his name. ¹⁷And they shall be mine, saith the Lord of hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spareth his own son that serveth him.

JHVH – “Saboath” is the seventh name for God in The Old Testament. Christians think this has to do with The Sabbath. The name JHVH is “I am that I am,” but Saboath is “Lord of Hosts.” Malachi gives an example

of the seventh name, JHVH, "Sabaoth," by relating the trials that human beings go through in this life.

This name tells you about God's nature, His character, and how He looks at you. **"¹³Your words have been stout against me, saith the Lord [JHVH, Sabboawith, speaking]. Yet ye say, What have we spoken so much against thee?"** God declares that mankind speaks against Him, but you say you never said anything against Him.

Then consider Malachi 3:14-15: **"¹⁴Ye have said, It is vain to serve God [no reason to serve God]: and what profit is it that we have kept his ordinance, and that we have walked mournfully before the Lord of hosts?"** [this Lord of Hosts is JHVH Sabaoth].

People say that you seem to receive no help in serving God. **¹⁵And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered.** This is referring to those who said they followed God, but it did not do any good. Instead, the wicked have been blessed, and the criminals have gotten away with murder.

A HOPELESS SITUATION

Have you ever been in a situation where you thought you couldn't take it any more? You felt that the pressures were just too much for you. You've tried to be a good Christian. You want to keep serving God. You pray to Him. You ask Him for help because problems have plagued your life – whether it is a sick child, the loss of a job, or a death in the family.

This is a time when all hope seems to be gone – and you feel like there is not even a reason to obey God or follow God. In Malachi 3:16, it states: **“¹⁶Then they that feared the Lord spake often one to another: and the Lord, hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written.”**

God's nature is such that He never forgets what you have gone through, or are going through. Your God never forgets anything you did to remain Faithful to Him.

Your Great God has a Book of Remembrance. **“¹⁶before him for them that feared the Lord, and that thought upon his name [the name JHVH, Sabboawith, Lord of hosts]. ¹⁷And they shall be mine saith the Lord of hosts [described in the context] in that day when I make up my jewels;...”**

You will, also, look like God, since God looks like jewels, so you, too, will look like jewels. (Chapter 3, Who is God?) **¹⁷And I will spare them, as a man spareth his own son that serveth him.”**

When all hope is gone, God says that the one thing about His nature is that He will always be there to deliver you. He won't have something more important to do. You can always count on God. No matter what you are required to go through, God will be there for you.

A QUICK SUMMARY

Now, to summarize these descriptions in The Old Testament: 1) Elohim:

Universal God, 2) JHVH or YHWH: The Righteous God, The Judgmental God, 3) El Shaddai: The Purer or Nurturer, 4) Elyon: Almighty, Most High, 5) El Olam: The God of Inheritance, 6) Adonai: The Lord or Master for your Good, your Husband and finally 7) JHVH – Sabaoth: The Lord of Hosts.

God is always there. All of God's titles and names deal universally with a very personal family relationship. The range goes from an all-encompassing God describing His totality – to a very personal God who deals with His Creation One-on-One:

I John 2:27: But the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.

The Apostle Paul said that you now have a Father that you can cry out Abba, Father, Dad, or Daddy. He goes from a God who is Almighty and impersonal, to a God who is all nurturing and personal. He is a God who upholds everything.

THE ANOINTING

It is most important to realize that God is one who deals with you personally in a Father/child Relationship. He has gone from a huge powerful God (universal God) to a Father who listens to you just as a human father listens to his child. In I John 2, The Apostle John said,

“²⁷But the anointing, which ye have received of him,” (the anointing of His Spirit).

John tells that when Christ was sealed as The Firstborn Son, the rest of mankind was, also, sealed. You are sealed with His Holy Spirit. Just as His Son was sealed with The Holy Spirit, you, too, are sealed by His Spirit: **“the anointing [Spirit] which ye have received of him abideth in you.”** You have God's seed in you.

You are, now, a Son of God, and He no longer deals with you as a servant – but as an Heir. This is what Galatians reveals. His final name as Father, is how He deals with you in a very personal way: **“...²⁷have received of him abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you:”**

This is because God is personally teaching and training you. **“...but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things [everything], and is truth, and is no lie.”** All of the meanings that comprise all the seven titles, can become part of you. These include The Covenant Keeper, The Nurturer, The Gift-giver, and The Deliverer. This is God's nature and character. By choice, He chooses not to be anything else: **“...and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.”**

So, you abide in your Father, and your Father is in you and you are One with Him. Behold, He is a wonderful, overwhelming God who gives you this Gift of Life. His Love for you makes you love Him, putting all your Faith and Trust in Him. YOUR GOAL IS TO BECOME PERFECT AS HE IS PERFECT!

CHAPTER 5

GOD'S LIBRARY

Is your name written in one of The Books in God's Library? Will you be in The Kingdom of God? To learn the answer, you must go to God's Library. In God's Books, you will find the entire Plan of Salvation – and who will be allowed into His Kingdom. The Book of Life concerns God's Plan for His Creation – in His Kingdom.

Through Christ, God reveals The New Heaven and The New Earth. After the earthly universe has passed away – and nothing physical remains – The Redeemed will observe The New Jerusalem coming down from heaven. It will be placed at its permanent location on The New Earth.

NEW JERUSALEM

Revelation 21:2 And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her Husband.

New Jerusalem is presented here in context of the image of a Bride. She will be entering the most incredible marriage ceremony in the history of

the universe. God's Word likens this New Jerusalem to a woman (Christians, in His Church) who will be joined in marriage to Christ, The Bridegroom. Now the question is, "Who is going to be permitted to reside in this city?"

Revelation 21:27 ²⁷And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie; but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life.

This text shows that no one will be able to enter the new city if he is a liar, or is abominable, or could defile it. The only ones permitted to enter this fabulous city are: "...**they which are written in the Lamb's book of life.**" With that declaration, everyone should sit up and take notice.

THE BOOKS OF GOD

In short, the only ones permitted to enter this New Jerusalem are those who have been written in The Book of Life – which is The Lamb's Book of Life. Another Bible translation titles it as: The Book of Life of The Lamb. Remember, this book is a Biography that will ultimately become an Autobiography.

A biography is a book that is written about someone else's life – whereas an autobiography is written about the person writing the book. This book begins as God's Word (Old Testament), and becomes Christ (New Testament), which is The Word of God. Consider whose words these are – written in this book.

When Christ was on this earth, He was required to live by God's Word. He followed it so Perfectly that He became The Word of God (Mark 14:49).

Revelation 1:1 ¹The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to shew unto his servants things which must shortly come to pass; and he sent and signified it by his angel unto his servant John:

Since God is not physical, these Books are not physical. God is Spiritual; so, therefore, these Books are Spiritual Records. It should be interesting to learn how God writes his Books – and where He stores them. Notice, it is **“¹The Revelation of Jesus Christ [Jesus Christ doing the revealing], which God gave unto him.”**

Christ did not write these words Himself. Rather, God, The Father informed Christ about what should be revealed. The content refers to God's Words – or The Word of God (John 5:30-38 and Deuteronomy 18:18). With this in mind, it is vital to address the following critical topic:

MYSTERY BABYLON

Revelation 17:5-10 ⁵And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. ⁶And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great

admiration. ⁷And the angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns. ⁸The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. ⁹And here is the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains on which the woman sitteth. ¹⁰And there are seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short space.

The only individuals who will proceed into New Jerusalem are those who have been written in The Lamb's Book of Life. This book is virtually The Book of The Life of The Lamb.

In Revelation 17, you learn about all the individuals who are excluded from this book. It will take a certain period of time for the world-shaking events to transpire before the beast power comes to an end. This beast will be a political system that incorporates the false prophet (false religion). This system will eventually be destroyed.

The beast has seven heads, and is mounted by a woman. One of the heads has ten crowns. In Revelation 17 and 18, you will find how this is a

reference to the worldly kingdoms – and a false religion. This government is satanic, and incorporates many lies and falsehoods.

Specifically, the critical text in Revelation 17 reports: **“⁵And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. ⁶And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration. ⁷And the angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns [the last ruling government just before Christ returns]. ⁸The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition:”**

TOWER OF BABEL

This system is called “Babylon.” It began at The Tower of Babel under the direction of Nimrod. Later, Daniel received prophetic inspiration about the resurrection of four heads (but totals five). One head is Babylon in Babel, to which are added the four beasts, comprising a total of five heads. One was Rome historically, while another was, yet, to come.

Continuing in Revelation 17: **“⁹And here is the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth. ¹⁰And there are seven kings: Five are fallen, [Babylon and the four beasts] and one is [one that was existing], and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short space.”**

Considering the 7th – or last one – be sure to remember the time period. Note, this is about God's Library, and are not getting into a prophecy discussion, at this time. This is only a brief overview regarding: **“8The beast that you sawest was, and is not; and shall ascent out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.”**

It is vital to recognize the main focus is upon the individuals who are not written in The Book of Life of The Lamb from The Foundation of The World. They will not be allowed into the future New Jerusalem.

THE REVEALER SPEAKS

It is high time for The Revealer to speak. Jesus Christ, The Revealer (or Revelator) explains important factors in The Book of Hebrews. In Chapter 1, He describes who is included – and, also, who is excluded.

Hebrews 1:1-5 ¹God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, ²Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; ³Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the majesty on high; ⁴Being

made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.

⁵For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son?

In times past, God spoke to The Israelites through The Prophets. The last Prophet was Malachi, who lived over 400 years before The Birth of Christ. Now, in these “last days,” it is recorded in Hebrews; God will speak through His Son. This Son is The Revealer through “...**whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds....**”

If God were more than One Being (such as two or three entities), then how could God inherit from God, Himself? He couldn't. No one could. This notion tells you that His Son receives An Inheritance. If God's Son receives An Inheritance, then He had to receive The Inheritance from another Being – not from two or three. And yet, you are informed that God created the entire universe. How can that be? This, generally “Unknown Library,” will tell you The Plan of God and how it will be accomplished.

BRIGHTNESS OF HIS GLORY

A major point of importance with the statement about: “**³Who being the brightness of his glory...**” The word “Glory” means “Divinity” or “God's Presence.” This passage is talking about His appearance, His looks, and elaborating on what He is.

Remember, in I Corinthians 15 during The Resurrection process, all will obtain a Glory – or A Presence of God. Christ already has a brightness that compares with God's Glory: **“...and the express image of his person...”** (the Greek means “charakter” or “character”). Christ is the express character of God's image.

This is a Being, who in His Glory, looks like God. He has the character of God. He is The Son of God – and He is An Heir: **“And upholding all things by the word of his power.”** His Word holds up the entire universe.

With Christ at the right hand of The Father, He is now responsible for all things. If He relinquished that power, the universe would suddenly disappear. No longer would there be any electromagnetic forces. Gravity would disappear. Nuclear forces (atoms) would fall apart and dissipate.

So, The Word of His Power (The Word of God) is currently sustaining this entire universe. Continuing Hebrew 1:3: **“...when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high [Jesus Christ is sitting at the right hand of God The Father upholding the whole universe]; ⁴Being made [Christ was made – just didn't happen] so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance.”** If He is to inherit anything, then it will be given to Christ. That is what An Inheritance is all about.

TESTIMONY OF JESUS

The Book of Revelation tells about The Testimony of Jesus. A testimony

is a contract based on A Promise: He: "...⁴**obtained a more excellent name than they.** ⁵**For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father [God speaking], and he shall be to me a Son?"** What is God's Will – and what does He intend to do?

I Timothy 2:1-4 ¹**I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; ²For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty. ³For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour; ⁴Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth. ⁵For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Jesus Christ:**

Paul is providing instructions for Timothy's benefit on how to conduct the ministry. Furthermore, Paul is saying that there are not two, three, or four – but only "...**one God, and one mediator** [Christ is The Mediator], **one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Jesus Christ:...**" Here He is specifically called a man.

So, how many gods do you tabulate? There is only One. Christ could not have been God. Christ is The Mediator. Christ is The Son. Only God is God. Christ is The Son of God.

Hebrews 1:5-11 ⁵**For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my son, this day have I begotten**

thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a son? ⁶And again, when he bringeth in the firstbegotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him. ⁷And of the angels he saith, Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire. ⁸But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a scepter of righteousness is the scepter of thy kingdom. ⁹Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows: ¹⁰And, Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of thine hands: ¹¹They shall perish; but thou remainest; and they all shall wax old as doth a garment;

A RUNNING COMMENTARY

God made Jesus Christ, His Son. ⁵For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a son? (read Psalm 27 about the time before Jesus Christ was born – HE WAS IN GOD'S MIND AS "THE WORD"). ⁶And again, when he [God] bringeth in the firstbegotten [Christ] into the world [Christ is the first begotten] he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him. ⁷And of the angels he saith, Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire. ⁸But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God [The Son

Inherits The Godship with a throne], **is for ever and ever: a scepter of righteousness is the scepter of thy kingdom.**"

These Scriptures provide a powerful declaration. The world's kingdoms are run like "Gentile Kingdoms," from the top, down. Those below serve and cater to the top. But God's Kingdom is The Scepter of Righteousness – which is set to serve those under it. So, likewise, all Churches should be administered in the same way. If it is God's Way, then it must require those on the top to administer the responsibility of serving those on the bottom.

Hebrews 1:9: **"⁹Thou hath loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God, even thy God [This is The Son's God, One God] hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows:..."**

These "fellows" are other human beings. The Book of Life, The Lamb's Book of Life, is all about Christ and the rest of humanity. Jesus Christ was once human, just as you are human. You remain human – but Christ was selected from a position above His Fellowman.

Then, **"¹⁰And, Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of thine hands: ¹¹They shall perish; but thou remainest; and they all shall wax old as doth a garment."**

HEBREWS VS. REVELATION

Paul related the concept in The Book of Hebrews – that since The Birth of

Christ – God reveals His Truth through His Son. All revelation, from Christ's birth forward, comes through Jesus Christ. Prophets were no longer needed like they were required in The Old Testament.

The Book of Revelation came, only, through Christ. Since it is An Inheritance, Christ received it from someone else. He couldn't take it from Himself. HE COULDN'T INHERIT FROM HIMSELF. He received His Inheritance from God, The Father. You already know the fact there is only One God. Now, who and what, is this Word of God?

Revelation 6:1 And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals, and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts saying, Come and see.

The moment just before Jesus Christ was to be sacrificed, He began to explain to The Apostles what would happen once He was crucified. Study Revelation 14, as each piece of this puzzle is vital. If you miss one piece, then you will not fully understand God's entire Plan.

Revelation 5 describes God, The Father's throne: "¹**And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals,...**" Realize that The Lamb who opens the seals is The Revelator.

Revelation 5:3-5 ³And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon. ⁴And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon. ⁵And one of the elders saith

**unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of
Juda, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the
book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.**

Realize that no man – regardless of where he might be placed – can open The Book of Six Seals. For further clarification, you must, also, study Revelation 15, 16, and Matthew 24. The latter text is when Christ was asked when the end would come – and, about His return.

Matthew 24 explains the series of events in sequence. The Six Seals covered that period of time. In Matthew 24, Christ revealed to The Disciples what will happen before He returns to the earth. Since no man can open The Book, you can only ask: “Who is able to open The Book?”

WHO OPENS THE BOOK?

It could only be a completely worthy man who is able to open The Book. But to a certain point no one could be found. The reaction was that: **“⁴And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon. ⁵And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold [describing the man], Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Juda, the Root of David [Christ's physical birth], hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.”**

Paul said that The Prophets, also, had revealed this in times past. The elder said only Jesus is worthy to open The Seals. What did Christ do to be worthy to unseal this vital Book?

Christ had to prove Himself by overcoming a great deal. He was the first One to have established Himself as worthy to enter The Kingdom of God. He was The Word in God's mind who became God's Word (Logos – John 1:1). He was given God's Spirit at birth, but Christ had to prove Himself in this carnal world (in His human flesh) to prove Himself worthy.

Hebrews 5:7-9 ⁷Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared; ⁸Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; ⁹And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him;...

This is the historical period when Jesus Christ was a human being. This is when He appealed to God with heartfelt prayer. This is because Christ had to become worthy in order to be placed within The Kingdom of God. That is the reason this written record is called The Book of Life of The Lamb).

THE BEGINNING OF PERFECTION

Christ was not automatically "Perfect" when He was born. He was just as human as the rest of mankind. He had to struggle with human nature, along with everyone else. Christ had to live Perfectly, and as a consequence, He became The Author of The Book. Christ became The Author of Salvation.

If, indeed, God wrote this Book – The Book of Life of The Lamb – how did it become an Autobiography? The answer is that “It was lived by Christ.” Do you see the difference? It was a Biography when it started, but then it ended up as An Autobiography. God wrote His Plan in His Mind (His Word), and then, Christ lived those very words. Consequently, each one of you will need to experience the very same thing.

Christians are written in The Book of Life. You will need to become The Word of God as a Witness of Christ. You are to become like Christ who is like God, The Father. Christ, in you (Colossians 1:27).

Hebrews 10:1-5 ¹For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect. ²For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the worshippers once purged should have had no more conscience of sins. ³But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every year. ⁴For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins. ⁵Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me:

Who speaks to everyone in these last days? Who reveals everything? It is Jesus Christ. Who became The Author of The Book? It is Jesus Christ. All this is “Here a little; there a little, precept upon precept.” The puzzle is coming together.

OPENING THE MYSTERY

God reveals His mystery through His Son, Jesus. Read, study, pray, and check The Scriptures. **“¹For the law having a shadow of good things to come...”** It will be difficult if you read the last part and do not examine the entire verse. Going on, **“and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices....”**

Most consider the shadows, to be the sacrifices. But what is the whole shadow? What is The whole Law? Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, Deuteronomy – and Abraham being the shadow of God, The Father. Isaac was the shadow of Jesus Christ, who was offered. All these shadows comprise God's Word.

The Old and New Testaments are a shadow of God's Word, which has become real. Isaac said: **“Father but where is the sacrifice?”** Abraham's answer was: **“God would provide us a sacrifice.”** ³**But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every year.** ⁴**For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins. Wherefore when he cometh into the world [Jesus came into the world], he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me:”**

Abraham is the father of the faithful, because when his son, Isaac, said: **“Where are we going to get the sacrifice?”** Abraham said: **“God will give us the sacrifice.”** In Hebrews 10:5, Abraham knew about this as it was written in God's library in The Book of Life of The Lamb.

GOD'S LIBRARY

Understand that Abraham, Moses, and David knew that God had a Library with The Complete Story (His Word) of Eternal Life. This included the details of who would be allowed into His Kingdom. These Books, however, are not codices. They were not written in the same manner as physical books. And, they are not scrolls that are written on papyrus. Where would you imagine God stored all these books? The Word of God is written in His Mind, because in His Mind is The Word of God (John 1:1).

Hebrews 10:6-9 ⁶In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin thou hast had no pleasure. ⁷Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me,) to do thy will, O God. ⁸Above when he said, Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings and offering for sin thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein; which are offered by the law; ⁹Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God. He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second.

Here is a reference to the text of a certain book. The book specifies that: **“⁶In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin thou hast had no pleasure. ⁷Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me) [of this body Christ] to do thy will, O God.”**

When reading the full text above, you see the basis for the statement that: **⁹“He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second.”** God

changed the sacrifice (a shadow) from sacrificing animals by providing the body of Christ (The Word became real), as the sacrifice for all mankind.

John 1:1-4 ¹In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. ²The same was in the beginning with God. ³All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. ⁴In him was life; and the life was the light of men.

In John, you see The Word appears long before He was Christ. **“¹In the beginning was the Word...**” Believe exactly what it says. Don't try to make anything up. The word is “logos.” Logos means “word” or “Divine Word.” The text continues: **“...and the Word was with God and the Word was God.”**

THE ONE GOD

How many Gods are there? In I Timothy 2:5, the answer is: **“One God.”** Whose Word was this? It is God's Word, because it is stated: **“²The same was in the beginning with God.”** What was in the beginning? It was His Word. Jesus Christ had to become the Author of that Word, by becoming worthy.

Christ had to do everything that was written in The Book: **“³All things were made by him [by God's Word]; and without him was not any thing made that was made. ⁴In him was life; and the life was the light**

of men.” This is a clear reference to Jesus Christ, who became God's Word or The Word of God.

I Corinthians 10:1-4 ¹Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; ²And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; ³And did all eat the same spiritual meat; ⁴And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ.

Who was with Israel during this entire course of events? The text of I Corinthians 10:1 shows that His Words are in one of God's books (but not in The Holy Bible). It is The Book of Life of The Lamb: **“¹Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud,”**

In Exodus, you find that The Cloud was “The Shekinah”: **“...and all passed through the sea; ²And were all baptized Unto Moses.”** The baptism of Moses was the baptism of circumcision – or The Works of The Law. There was, also, the baptism of John, which was THE BAPTISM OF REPENTANCE. So, there are two completely different baptisms.

BAPTISM IN THE SEA

Some Christians, today, still think they are in the baptism under Moses – doing The Works of The Law: **“²And were all baptized unto Moses in**

the cloud and in the sea; ³And did all eat the same spiritual meat;..."

They ate the physical food, "manna."

But this is about Spiritual food, and Christ said that you had to eat His body and drink His blood. This is His Word. "**³And did all eat the same spiritual meat; ⁴And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them:...**" And who was THE SPIRITUAL ROCK? "**...and that Rock was Christ.**"

This Rock followed them. It was not leading them as by the angel. So you only have One God. You have The Word of God, who was God's Word – or God. This Spiritual Rock following Moses was God's Word who became Christ. CHRIST WAS NOT BORN UNTIL THOUSANDS OF YEARS LATER. The Word of God became Christ's Word (Deuteronomy 18:18). The only place you could find these words would be in God's Library.

Psalms 40:1-8 ¹I waited patiently for the Lord; and he inclined unto me, and heard my cry. ²He brought me up also out of an horrible pit, out of the miry clay, and set my feet upon a rock, and established my goings. ³And he hath put a new song in my mouth, even praise unto our God: many shall see it, and fear, and shall trust in the Lord. ⁴Blessed is that man that maketh the Lord his trust, and respecteth not the proud, nor such as turn aside to lies. ⁵Many, O Lord my God, are thy wonderful works which thou hast done, and thy thoughts which are to us-ward: they cannot be

reckoned up in order unto thee: if I would declare and speak of them, they are more than can be numbered. ⁶Sacrifice and offering thou didst not desire; mine ears hast thou opened: burnt offering and sin offering hast thou not required. ⁷Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me, ⁸I delight to do thy will, O my God: yea, thy law is within my heart.

David understood The Prophecy about Christ. David knew that he had to be worthy – or become Perfect. In Psalms, David's enemies surrounded him, and he had to look to God and call upon Him for protection.

WAITING PATIENTLY ON GOD

David is praying about Jesus Christ and explaining what Christ will be going through. Psalms 40:1 says: **"¹I waited patiently for the Lord;..."** You must wait patiently for The Return of Christ also. **"...and he inclined unto me, and heard my cry [his prayers]. ²He brought me up also out of an horrible pit [The Lake of Fire]) out of the miry clay, and set my feet, upon a rock, and established my goings."** I Corinthians 10 confirms that The Rock is Christ, or God's Word.

After you read how David should live, you now enter sensitive territory. Read very carefully from here on – because each word becomes "golden" – and your Salvation depends upon it. The Psalmist declares: **"³And he hath put a new song in my mouth...."** A new song was read in Revelation. The Saints of God sing this new song: **"Even praise unto our God: many shall see it, And fear, and shall trust in the Lord."**

Then, the subject points to The Resurrection: **“⁴Blessed is that man that maketh the Lord his trust, and respecteth not the proud, nor such as turn aside to lies.”** The liars will go into The Lake of Fire. Mediate this over and over until you fully understand it. **“⁵Many, O Lord my God, are Thy wonderful works.”**

This is talking about God: **“...which thou hast done, and thy thoughts [God's thoughts] which are to us-ward: they cannot be reckoned up in order unto thee: if I would declare and speak of them, they are more than can be numbered.”** This applies to all humanity.

These are the riches in Christ (God's Words or thoughts). In verse 6, you read about God's Thoughts. His many wonderful Works are all about you. The Apostle Paul interpreted them in his Epistle.

Notice Hebrews 10:5-9: **“⁶Sacrifice and offering thou didst not desire; mine ears hast thou opened: burnt offering and sin offering hast thou not required. ⁷Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me...”**

BLOTTED OUT OF THE BOOK

Paul said the following words applied to Christ: **“⁸I delight to do thy will, O my God: yea, thy law is within my heart.”** So these are God's Words that are written in The Book. In Hebrews 10, you read the same thing. These are God's Words written in His Book, which is in His Mind – as “Thoughts.” **“In the beginning was the Word. And the Word was with God.”** This is God's Word, and The Word was God. Jesus Christ became

The Author of this Book: by becoming worthy and doing everything written in that Book.

Exodus 32:31-34 ³¹And Moses returned unto the Lord, and said, Oh, this people have sinned a great sin, and have made them gods of gold. ³²Yet now, if thou wilt forgive their sin--; and if not, blot me, I pray thee, out of thy book which thou hast written. ³³And the Lord said unto Moses, Whosoever hath sinned against me, him will I blot out of my book. ³⁴Therefore now go, lead the people unto the place of which I have spoken unto thee: behold, mine Angel shall go before thee: nevertheless in the day when I visit I will visit their sin upon them.

Compare Exodus 32 and Psalm 40. After Israel had created the golden calf: ³¹...Moses returned unto the Lord, and said, Oh, this people have sinned a great sin, and have made them gods of gold. ³²Yet now, if thou wilt forgive their sin; and if not, blot me, I pray thee, out of thy book which thou hast written."

Then, when God conveys the following message: ³³And the Lord said unto Moses, Whosoever hath sinned against me, him will I blot out of my book. ³⁴Therefore now go, lead the people unto the place of which I have spoken unto thee: behold, mine Angel shall go before thee: nevertheless in the day when I visit I will visit their sin upon them."

THE SHEKINAH GLORY

This was an angel. It wasn't another god (Acts 7:30). Remember that The Rock followed Israel. But, THE ANGEL LED ISRAEL. It wasn't Christ as another Being. That was the reason why The Jews began using the name "shekinah." It was because Israel knew and understood that God was not in The Temple.

As a Being, God was not in The Holy of Holies. It was what they called "the shekinah." This Hebrew word has two roots: "shakan" which means, "to dwell", "a glorious place to dwell" along with "God's presence" or "the dwelling place of God's presence." The Glory of God was The Presence of God. God, the Being, was not there. Christ, as God's Word or God's Presence was positioned there.

The Shekinah, God's Glory, or His Word by The Holy Spirit, was The One who became Christ. This special power was in The Temple. The story comes together perfectly. Christ was never in existence before He was born as a human Being.

The Word of God was just what it says: God's Word. God wrote from His Thoughts – and His Mind – in His Book. This is a Spiritual Book called The Lamb's Book of Life. Christ was written in that Book, and YOU ALSO, ARE WRITTEN IN THAT BOOK.

Psalm 139:1-16 ¹O Lord, thou hast searched me, and known me. ²Thou knowest my downsitting and mine uprising, thou understandest my thought afar off.

³Thou compassest my path and my lying down, and art acquainted with all my ways. ⁴For there is not a word in my tongue, but, lo, O Lord, thou knowest it altogether. ⁵Thou hast beset me behind and before, and laid thine hand upon me. ⁶Such knowledge is too wonderful for me; it is high, I cannot attain unto it. ⁷Whither shall I go from thy spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence? ⁸If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, thou art there. ⁹If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the seas; ¹⁰Even there shall thy hand lead me, and thy right hand shall hold me. ¹¹If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me. ¹²Yea, the darkness hideth not from thee; but the night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to thee. ¹³For thou hast possessed my reins: thou hast covered me in my mother's womb. ¹⁴I will praise thee: for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvellous are thy works; and that my soul knoweth right well. ¹⁵My substance was not hid from thee, when I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. ¹⁶Thine eyes did see my substance, yet being imperfect; and in thy book all my members were written, which in continuance were fashioned, when as yet there was none of them.

This is speaking about David, and explaining what God has in his Mind. He knows when you get up, and when you lie down, and He knows all your thoughts. Christ told you that God knows when four sparrows fall, and, then, explains that you are worth more than four sparrows.

In the absolute sense, no one can get away from God's Spirit: **"⁷Whither shall I go from your spirit?"** God's Spirit keeps Him informed. The text continues with **"...whither shall I flee from thy presence? ⁸If I ascend up into heaven. ⁹If I take the wings to the uttermost parts of the seas [God is there]; ¹⁰thy hands lead me. ¹²the darkness shall cover me."**

There is no place where you can hide from God or His Spirit: **"¹³thou hast covered me in my mother's womb. ¹⁴I will praise thee; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvelous are thy works; and that my soul knoweth right well. ¹⁵My substance [what I'm really made of] was not hid from thee, when I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. ¹⁶Thine eyes did see my substance, yet being unperfect [not made as a human yet] and in thy book all my members were written,"**

DESIGN OF THE HUMAN BODY

God's Book shows the design of the human body: **"...which in continuance were fashioned, when as yet there was none of them."** How long ago did God know you? He knew you from "the beginning." He knew every part of you – and every single person He created. He knew exactly how you were going to be made and how you would look.

God knew about His Son, Jesus Christ, because He was, also, written in that same Book. The Word of God, which was in the beginning, means God's Word as it was written. It was God's Thoughts written into Words. How was Christ, The Author (or the first One) to be worthy in The Kingdom of God?

Luke 1:31-35 ³¹And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call him Jesus. ³²He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David: ³³And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end. ³⁴Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? ³⁵And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God.

At Christ's birth, this Noble Being had something resident within Him that the rest of mankind did not possess. **“³⁴Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? [i.e., I'm a virgin]. ³⁵And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee.”**

A very simple point of evidence is The Holy Spirit isn't another person (or a Being). A question you should ask yourself is how The Holy Spirit can be given to someone and then become another person. That would be

possession – and only demons possess. So, The Holy Spirit is just God's Spirit.

THE HOLY WIND

The word “Holy” in Greek means “blameless” or “righteous.” The word “spirit” in Greek is “pneuma.” What is pneuma? Have you heard of pneumatics? **Pneuma** means “wind.” This is a righteous wind, which came upon Mary.

You know that wind is energy. This righteous energy came upon Mary: “...³⁵**and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God.”**

Why is He called The Son of God? Did He exist as God before? Absolutely not. This is because God's Holy Spirit was upon Mary – and the very presence (divinity) or power of God (as with Adam) caused Jesus Christ's birth. God's Holy Spirit made Him The Word by living God's Word.

That is, also, why Christ was The Rock who followed The Israelites. It is because He was written in The Book in God's Mind. Christ was The Rock in God's mind until He was born. Everything fits. What is The Purpose of The Holy Spirit?

John 14 states: “**Christ was going to give a comforter.**” Then, in John 16: “**And that comforter does lead you into all truth.**” When God

gave Him His Holy Spirit at Christ's birth, it led Him, as He grew into the awareness that He was The Son of God. Jesus had been performing everything that The Word of God had written in The Book of God, in The Library of His Own Mind! **“Lo, I come in the volume it is written of me.”** For Christ to be The Word of God, he had to fulfill all The Scriptures (Mark 14:49).

It is The Holy Spirit writing that The Word would become Christ. In The Book of Revelation, Christ became The Word of God. He was God's Word from His human birth. He was everything that was in God's Mind, along with The Power of The Holy Spirit. Hebrews 1 makes clear that **CHRIST WAS IN GOD'S EXPRESS IMAGE**. God had reproduced Himself, in His Son, Jesus (I Corinthians 15:28).

LET THIS MIND BE IN YOU

All the marvelous Works that God was going to create in Christ (and, eventually, in all mankind) were always in God's Thoughts. When God gives His Spirit to you, you become His Word. Hence, you have the very Mind of God: **“Let this mind be in you which was also in Christ Jesus”** (Philippians 2:5). Why did God do this? It is because it gives pleasure to God to reproduce Himself – with God being the maximum Giver of all.

Ephesians 1:1-12 ¹Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus: ²Grace be to you, and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ. ³Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord

Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: ⁴According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: ⁵Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, ⁶To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved. ⁷In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace; ⁸Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence; ⁹Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself: ¹⁰That in the dispensation of the fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him: ¹¹In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will: ¹²That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ.

Paul tells about Jesus Christ, and what happens to Christians: **“¹Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God...”** This was not because Christ was God before, but this is by God's Will. What God Wills, He has in His Thoughts and has written in His Book. **“By the will of God, to the**

saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus:
²**Grace be to you and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ [The Master].** ³**Blessed be the God and Father [One God] of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ:”**

These are heavenly blessings, and not works of The Law. They are not pagan rituals – but heavenly blessings! **“⁴According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:...”** The emphasis is upon the vital word of “love.”

In the word “agapè,” mankind is in The Mind of Christ. This thought continues with: **“⁵Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children...”** The Greek word for “predestinated” could mean not only “predestined” as He made you, but, also, that He “foreknew” this. He Planned it that way, and wrote it in His Book.

ADOPTION OR SONSHIP?

The sense of this teaching does not include “adoption” as it is understood in the English language. This is because if you are going to become One of God's children, you are not adopted – but rather – you are literally One of His Children! When you are born, you are human. When you are “spirit,” you are One of His Children.

It is true you, being human, are not yet God's son, but when you become a Spirit Being – or a Son of God – then you have God in you. As a result,

you are “adopted” as human beings to become Spirit Beings like God – or finally, The Sons of God.

Originally you came from a human father – but, now, you come from God's Spirit: “...by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, ⁶To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved. ⁷In whom we have redemption [speaking of Christ] through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace: ⁸Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence; ⁹Having made known unto us the mystery of his will [God's Will is to save the world], according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself:”

This Element is not found within other Beings. It was not in Christ as The Word before He became Christ. By means of the words “in himself:” correlates with I Corinthians 15:29 where He purposed it in Himself. John 1:1 confirms this with: “**In the beginning was God.** ¹⁰**That in the dispensation of the fullness of times He might gather together in one all things in Christ....”**

The Book of Life of The Lamb is in The Book of Life, because Christ is in you. Christ proved Himself worthy, even though He was tempted in every point, just as are, all Christians. Christ became The Author of The Book of Life. It was His Autobiography.

I Corinthians 15 confirms that Christ subdued every enemy. Consequently, He turned everything over to The Father because everything was in Christ at that time. This would mean that God would

have totally reproduced Himself. “...¹⁰**both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him:** ¹¹**In whom also we have obtained an inheritance....”** The implications are astounding.

THE SAME INHERITANCE

In this process, you get the same Inheritance that Jesus received – because you are in Christ. That is a Key Point. In short, you are “One, with Christ,” with The Father.

The Inheritance that The Father gave to His Son, you as a Christian will also share in that same Glory: “...**an inheritance, being predestinated** [predetermined and written in that Book of Life] **according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after** [what?] **the counsel of his own will: that we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ.”**

That is why The Word of God was God as He counseled with Himself. Who has considered this important aspect?

Malachi 3:13-16 ¹³**Your words have been stout against me, saith the Lord. Yet ye say, What have we spoken so much against thee? ¹⁴Ye have said, It is vain to serve God: and what profit is it that we have kept his ordinance, and that we have walked mournfully before the Lord of hosts? ¹⁵And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered. ¹⁶Then they that feared**

the Lord spake often one to another: and the Lord hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the Lord, and that thought upon his name.

The Book of Malachi relates the sufferings of The Saints. Malachi explains about two types of people. One type is saying, "Why should I serve God? The wicked are blessed. It doesn't seem to do any good to serve God." ¹³**"Your words have been stout against me, saith the Lord."** The other type knows the distinct advantage in serving The Living God.

BOOK OF REMEMBRANCE

God speaks about the people who say it doesn't do any good to serve God. This was covered in Chapter 4. Pick up that story with the words of: ¹⁶**"Then they that feared the Lord."** This refers to Psalm 40, which said that many shall fear and turn to trust in The Lord. The more complete text reads: ¹⁶**"Then they that feared the Lord spake often to one another [Christian to Christian], And the Lord hearkened, and heard it, and a Book of Remembrance was written before him [before God, that is] for them that feared the Lord, and that thought upon his name."**

The Book of Life of The Lamb is complete. Not only does it contain the full story about Jesus – but it, also, chronicles God as The Word, who became Christ at birth. It was then that He became worthy as The Author of Salvation. As you can see, through Christ, Christians have the same Inheritance.

As Christians, everything you do, everything you think and everything you say, is written in The Book. God is writing everything in The Book – not to use against you, but to remember what you went through to become like Him. Everyone, who is written in The Book of Life, will be in The Kingdom of God.

Christ was the first to qualify; and then the Christians whose names are in The Book will Inherit all things. CHRISTIANS WILL, LIKE CHRIST, BECOME THE SONS OF GOD AND BE THE BRIDE OF CHRIST, IN THE KINGDOM OF GOD.

CHAPTER 6

GOD'S MIND REVEALED

The Bible relates one continuous story from Genesis 1 to Revelation 22. Many dozens of scribes over thousands of years have been faithfully recording this historic account. The principal reason Christians do not understand The Bible as one continuous story is because they read The Bible in segments.

Many Christians read only The Old Testament, while others merely study The New Testament. Still others read just The Proverbs, Psalms, and various isolated chapters.

When The Bible is properly displayed as one continuous story, THEN GOD REVEALS HIS MIND TO YOU. The Holy Bible is God's mind that is revealed as God's Word – or The Word of God.

II Timothy 3:16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:

The Greek translation for the word “inspired” means “God breathed.” The entire Bible is His Breath or Word, which God gives to Christians in written form. Before anything existed, God had pre-ordained everything,

and this was written down in His Spiritual Library. This Library was not composed of physical books, but rather Spiritual Books.

Then you read about The Lamb's Book of Life, which is a book about marriage. It is a marriage directory – or marriage registry. It tells you the identity of The Groom, The Bride, and then it lists all of The Guests in the register – which is The Lamb's Book of Life.

BOOK OF REMEMBRANCE

God also has a Book of Remembrance, in which He writes everything down. He remembers all past happenings – as well as those in the present and in the future. These books represent The Mind of God, His Thoughts, His Purpose, and His Plan.

You can investigate God's mind as it is revealed in your Bible. When God reveals His mind and thoughts, He is giving you the totality of HIS PLAN, and HIS PURPOSE. From the time of Genesis 1 until the prophets appear, God spoke directly through an angel to Adam and Eve in The Garden of Eden.

You will notice as this continuous flowing story unfolds, you will begin to observe how to put the whole puzzle together. When you do, it will enable you to comprehend how to study The Word of God. Then, you will understand The Mystery of God.

The Apostle John received the revelation of Christ on The Isle of Patmos. It was about events to occur in the last days. Chapter 4 discloses a unique

picture of God, His throne, and the twenty-four elders bowing down to Him. The four and twenty elders say:

Revelation 4:11 **Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.**

Also:

Psalm 40:7 **Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me,**

The thoughts of God are for your good. The Word was with God and The Word was God. This Word became Christ – and was the complete predestination in God's mind. The Words of God are The Thoughts, which He had preordained.

WHO CREATED EVERYTHING?

Throughout The Bible, God tells you that Christ created all things. But Romans 1 explains that The Father did this. The twenty-four elders report that Christ is worthy of all honor and all power because God created all things. So it was God, The Father, who created everything. It was done through His Mind, The Word, who became Christ. It was He who from the womb was filled with God's Spirit. He became The Word of God.

In The Father's mind, all that He had predestined became Christ. A very significant verse is found in Revelation 4, which says: "¹¹...**and for thy pleasure, they are and were created.**" When God made everything, He

made it for His pleasure. This Greek word for “pleasure” could mean “one’s will” or “desire,” but it, also, means “choice.” It was His free will, or His choice, which gave Him pleasure to create everything.

I Corinthians 15:28 And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.

After Jesus Christ conquers all enemies, and finally conquers death, He returns all authority back to God, The Father. But why? Could it be for God to become “all and in all?” Indeed, God is all, and God is in all things.

GOD IS ALL

The entire universe is God. Everything you look at is God, because without God there is absolutely nothing. Not only is everything God, but at the end, God will be in everyone. You will be “One” with Him. When Christ became The Word in the flesh, The Prophets ended. Malachi was the last prophet who was recorded in The Bible.

Hebrews 1:2 tells you that God speaks to each individual through His Son in the last days. God used The Prophets to speak to the people – attempting to bring them along for HIS PURPOSE. The Prophets in The Old Testament transferred The Word.

Both The Old and The New Testament comprise the entire Word of God. Through scribes, some of God's library was physically recorded for all mankind to experience. Christ in The New Testament speaks to Christians directly.

Prophets may be used to foretell things in the future, but they will never be used by God to bring you to Christ. Who can help bring a person to Christ? It is The Church – His body. You are to become One with God, as Christ is One with The Father. In Christ, you become One with The Father – by becoming The Word of God.

In Revelation, read the description of Christ's throne. He is The One worthy to unleash the seals of the little book, and His name is The Word of God (Revelation 19:13). As a witness – or as an ambassador of Jesus – you are, also, an example of The Word of God.

This Word became a physical book at the time when God no longer dealt with just one person – such as Abraham. God was addressing a nation. It was The Nation of Israel – specifically, The 12 Tribes of Israel. It was Moses' responsibility to write all that God told him. The Word was transferred into The Holy Scriptures as an unblemished account of God's Mind.

SEVEN ELEMENTS

The Bible discloses seven important elements. When you understand these seven elements, then you will begin to know how God thinks.

1. The first and foremost element is CREATION itself. God created everything by means of His own free choice. It was for His pleasure.
2. The second element is REPRODUCTION. There is Godly reproduction and Satanic reproduction. In one parable of Christ, the whole world was to be given the seed, which was God's Word. In planting the seed or God's Word, thorns and weeds would, also, grow.

In Matthew 13, read: **“²⁷Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? From whence then hath it tares?”** And in Matthew 14: **“³⁸the tares are the children of the wicked one.”** So Satan has produced children, by means of his own deception – which was the counterfeit of GOD'S PURPOSE to reproduce Himself.

In I Corinthians 15, a similar Scripture notes God's Purpose: **“²⁸And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.”** This shows that God is procreating Himself.

To understand God's mind, first you must know who God is. After reading Chapter 3 entitled “Who Is God?” – and studying The Scriptures as outlined in Chapter 4 (“God's Character and Personality”), you are now prepared for the next piece of the puzzle.

WHO IS GOOD?

You know that God is Holy, unblemished, perfect, fair, just, and without flaw. God is Righteous and does only what is “right” and “good.” He

never makes a mistake. Christ said in Matthew 19: **“¹⁷Why callest thou me good? There is none good but one, that is, God:”** He doesn't let the wicked get away with anything.

Often you may think that the wicked are not punished for their offenses. But what they sow, they shall also reap. Ultimately, God is love or agapè. Never forget that agapè is “intellectual, moral love.” Agapè love is such caring that you give your own life in fulfillment of it.

In Greek, there is, also, “eros” which means “passion” or “emotion,” and “phila” which means “friendly,” “sociable,” or “compatible.” When man sinned, “agapè” was lost, leaving only “eros” and “phila.” There are so many divorces today because people marry for “eros” and “phila” types of love.

If couples married for agapè (which takes time), long-term marriages would result – because their love would be agapè. The intellectual and moral love of people for each other – would allow them to become one flesh. They would be willing to give their lives for each other. But divorces increased because agapè is not a part of these physical unions.

The one ingredient about God, which stands out in reproducing Himself, is The Gift of Free Choice. You may ask, “Why didn't He make everyone perfect in the beginning? Why must one go through all these trials?” You had to be given free choice – or else you would have been a robot.

If mankind were made perfect in the beginning, there would have been no free choice. God's Plan to reproduce Himself had to be designed

perfectly, so that you would ultimately become a Son of God – just like Christ. If you had not been given free choice, then God would not be reproducing Himself.

God has total free choice. So do you – so that you may become God! God needed to have you learn to have total faith and trust in Him. By this Godly reverence, an eternal kingdom can exist which will have everlasting joy and peace.

THE THIRD ELEMENT

3. The third element is INHERITANCE. Since God is reproducing Himself in you, it is A Gift. You would never be able to earn it. Inheritance is A Gift. But it is much, much more.

Ephesians 3:14-15 ¹⁴For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, ¹⁵Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named.

To whom does he bow? It is to: **“the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, ¹⁵Of Whom the whole family...”** So this Inheritance is clearly A Gift. But as far back as Adam and Eve, little by little, too many turned to worshipping the things God created – instead of worshipping The Creator.

Why would anyone want to worship the sun, stars, or any image – and call them gods? God created everything in this universe, but those objects should not be worshipped as gods. The whole story hinges on creation,

Godly reproduction, and inheritance. An inheritance is an unearned gift that is passed on from a loving father to his children.

Matthew 19:3-6 ³The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? ⁴And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female, ⁵And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh? ⁶Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.

THE FOURTH ELEMENT

4. The fourth element is MARRIAGE. But which type of marriage? **“³The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? ⁴And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female.”**

God instituted the first marriage with Adam, as a type of Christ. Adam had his chance to become The Savior of The World. When Adam was created, God declared that He created both male and female. God is male dominant and looks like a male. But, He, also, has the female DNA within Him. So, when God produced a male and a female, He was reproducing Himself. By making them Male and Female, God created them as One.

Jesus attempts to explain how you can take something that was ONE (Marriage) and tear it apart (Divorce). You cannot do this. If you do, then the union dies. Jesus said:

“⁵And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh? [how they were made in the beginning] ⁶Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.”

So what was lost in The Garden of Eden? It was God's type of marriage. God's marriage was lost in The Garden of Eden because originally Adam and Eve were one flesh, and there was agapè. Why was it an agapè type of love? Read Ephesians 5.

Ephesians 5:28-29 ²⁸So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself. ²⁹For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church:

Adam and Eve had an “agapè” union. They could have had agapè or God's love which is what God is – but agapè was lost. How should wives and husbands conduct themselves in a Godly marriage? The answer is: **“²⁸So ought men to love their wives [how?] as their own bodies [Adam and Eve were of the same body]. He that loveth his wife loveth himself.”**

Adam and Eve, having the same body, were one. **“²⁹For no man ever yet**

hated his own flesh;...” Do you wonder why it is hard for men to say “no” to a wife? A husband may want something else and may hint at it, but usually he will go along with her idea. Notice: **“²⁹For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church:”**

God's marriage is so completely different from the world's type of marriage. Adam could not, “fail to love his wife.” Why? It is because she came out of him. Marriage is the fourth element. You are to become One with God.

THE FINAL ELEMENTS

5. The fifth element is RESTORATION. Agapè was lost. Notice the first thing that God did when He created the heaven and the earth. In Genesis 1, **“³God said, Let there be light.”** Before light, there was darkness on the earth. God said, “the light was good.” Nothing is said about the darkness. In I John 1, we read: **“⁵God is Light, and in Him is no darkness at all.”**

So God was creating an earth, a universe, and a mixture of both light and dark. To be like God, there can be no darkness in you – only total light. God was revealing Himself, His Mind, and how He Thinks – in The Six Days of Creation. He created a world that is a mixture of good and evil, light and dark – and it has been this way from the very beginning.

After those six days, God declared that light was good. He put the greater light to rule the day and the lesser light to rule the night. He created the

moon so that it would never be totally dark. Then the people, forgetting God, The Creator, began worshipping the sun and the moon.

In Revelation, the sun is the picture of The Father, and the moon is the picture of The Bride – or the wife who reflects the light of The Father (the sun). People started worshipping the creation itself. They knew more than many Christians do today.

Romans 1:20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse:

Notice the words: “²⁰**For the invisible things of him...are clearly seen...**” These are invisible laws of electromagnetism, etc. as in Chapter 1 “Is God Real?” The sun, the moon, the light, the darkness, male and female, and all the animals reveal God.

There is not enough time to recount how God's Mind is revealed in His Creation. The Six Days of Creation reveal The Power and The Magnificent Plan of God. God is reproducing Himself.

In the spring season, there is the resurrection aspect. In the summer, there is growth, and then in the fall, one gains maturity. Finally, in the winter season there is snow. When one dies, sin has been paid for. The whiteness is the righteousness, which comes up in the resurrection. The righteous ones are clothed in white.

The seasons portray the resurrection and the life cycle. The whole life cycle of humanity reveals God. The entire agricultural harvest season reveals God. And people ask the question: "Why doesn't God show Himself?" Open your eyes to see God revealed through His Creation!

6. The sixth element is REDEMPTION. This is the underlying theme of the entire Bible – and is the basis for the release of the human spirit into freedom. Release is what accompanies redemption as an integral part of the process. This is the only pure form of freedom that is found exclusively in The Truth of God.

7. The seventh element is THE KINGDOM OF GOD. This is the ultimate accomplishment in the redemption process. IT IS THE GOAL OF GOD'S ENTIRE PLAN. These seven elements will bring you much closer to a full understanding of how God thinks.

WHY DID GOD MAKE THE ANGELS?

Hebrews 1:14 Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?

Paul said that Christ was higher than the angels, and that He was made better than them. Therefore, what was the reason for the angels? **"Are they [the angels] not all ministering spirits, sent forth to [do what?] minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?"**

The only reason God created the angelic kingdom (which includes Satan) was for you. It is God reproducing Himself in you! In John 5:37, it states: **“And the Father himself, which hath sent me, hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape.”** Why can't God reveal Himself to you or show Himself to the world?

In Chapter 11 entitled “The Lake of Fire,” you will find that all mankind would burn up. God had to create beings (Angels) as messengers who could convey what God wanted done. In Revelation, you find that before the new heaven and new earth, the universe is burned up. So God had to create angels to protect humans from being consumed.

The angels could manifest themselves as human beings. So God did not reveal Himself from the beginning because humans would have been consumed. Remember what happened at Mount Sinai to the ancient Israelites? That wasn't God. Moses said that he spoke to God face-to-face. Did he? Well, someone is a liar. If Moses spoke to God face-to-face, then Jesus Christ lied. **JESUS CHRIST SAID THAT NO MAN HAS HEARD NOR SEEN THE FATHER.** Well, who is it that Moses spoke to, if it wasn't God?

The Acts 7:29-30 ²⁹Then fled Moses at this saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sons. ³⁰And when forty years were expired, there appear to him in the wilderness of Mount Sinai an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.

Israel and Judah knew all this, but today no one seems to know it. Even

theologians fight over this identity. Who was The Rock? Who was The Word? Who appeared in the burning bush? Who gave Moses The Ten Commandments?

Stephen, the first deacon, who eventually became an evangelist, was stoned and killed in the end. In the 7th chapter of The Book of Acts, Stephen said: **“²⁹Then fled Moses at this saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sons.”** When Moses arrived in the Land of Midian, who did he confront? Remember his wife said that it was The Mount of God. He went in front of a bush.

VOICE FROM THE BUSH

According to Acts 7, the voice out of the bush said: **“³³Put off your shoes from thy feet for the place where thou standest is holy ground** [Moses believed he was talking to God]. **³⁰And when forty years were expired, there appeared to him in the wilderness of Mount Sinai [what?] an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.”** It wasn't God, The Father; it was an angel. Christ told The Truth. No man has ever heard God's voice.

Acts 7:53 Who have received the law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept it.

Verse 53 of Acts 7 refers to the giving of The Ten Commandments along with The Whole Law. According to Exodus, The Ten Commandments were put directly into the ARK – God's Throne (the mercy seat). The Book of The Law was placed in the side of the ARK.

Who actually gave it to Moses? **“⁵³Who have received the law by [who?] the disposition of angels, and have not kept it.”** God had to create angels in the beginning because this was the only way they could be the messengers speaking in the place of God. Moses wanted to know what to tell Pharaoh. He said, **“I AM sent you.”** The angel was speaking in the third person, in God's place.

God thought of everything, and it all makes sense. God required that His angels (messengers) would inform humanity of His Plan. God was revealing Himself. In Romans 1:20, you learn that God revealed Himself through “the physical creation.”

AMBASSADOR OF THE WORD

In Acts 7, it was a special angel who spoke as an ambassador in the place of The Word of God. He is the angel of The Lord, representing God. God built the angelic kingdom so that the angels could be the messengers.

Ephesians 1:4-11 ⁴According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: ⁵Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, ⁶To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved. ⁷In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace; ⁸Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence;

⁹Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself: ¹⁰That in the dispensation of the fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him: ¹¹In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will:

You will need some background information to understand this magnificent story. **“⁴According [talking about God] as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world [God thought of all this before there was a universe], that we should be holy and without blame before him in love:”** What is this? It is Agapè Love.

God is literally duplicating Himself. But first He allows free choice. All that God is and does – is according to His pleasure – and of His own free choice. **“⁵Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to [what?] the good pleasure of his will, ⁶To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved. ⁷In whom we have [what?] redemption.”** This is the sixth element specified earlier above.

Later you will understand why you have to be redeemed. It is specified as you continue with the text above: **“...through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace; ⁸Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence; ⁹Having made**

known unto us the mystery of his will..." He kept it secret from most, but He has been disclosing it little by little, over a period of time.

He only reveals to each of you what you can assimilate in order to be Saved. Every man, in his own sequence: **"...according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself: ¹¹In whom also we have obtained [what?] an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsel"**

GOD'S COUNSEL

Who does He counsel with? He counsels with Himself: **"...of his own will:"** If in the beginning, all this was thought out and He wrote it in The Spiritual Books of His Mind, then who else would there be to counsel with? There was no one. **THIS WHOLE PLAN REVEALS ONLY GOD'S MIND.**

Genesis 2:1-4 ¹Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. ²And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. ³And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made. ⁴These are the generations of the heavens and of the earth when they were created, in the day that the Lord God made the earth and the heavens.

Backtrack to Hebrews 4, which outlines The Purpose of The Sabbath. THE SABBATH IS THE PICTURE OF GOD'S REST WHEN HE FINISHED ALL HIS PHYSICAL CREATION – BUT NOT HIS SPIRITUAL CREATION. In Matthew 19, Christ said that in the beginning, marriage was not the way it is today. When Adam and Eve sinned, they could no longer be in paradise.

“³And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made.” You don't make a Tree of Life if you have already been created Spiritually (in the beginning) in the likeness of God.

In Genesis 3, Adam and Eve are in The Garden of Eden. They were complete in God's rest. Everything needed or anything wanted was provided. But all was lost. One loss was God's type of marriage (Matthew 19). They couldn't be reproduced as God's Sons, so they lost The Inheritance. But creation, reproduction, inheritance, and marriage all continued anyway.

GOD'S MIND REVEALED

As reinforced throughout this book, God's story reveals His Mind through His Word. Think of the lack of concern: (1) no worry about food; (2) they were vegetarians. They didn't eat meat, but neither did the animals eat meat. There were no carnivorous animals. They had what people will have in The Millennium. The lion is going to lie down with the lamb.

During the first seven days, all the herbs and all the fruit of trees were available to Adam and Eve. All the beasts and animals had their straw to eat. There were no poisonous snakes. Satan can be blamed for making them poisonous. There were: (3) no weather problems, and (4) no clothes to worry about. They didn't even know about sex.

So they didn't love each other because of eros. It was not because passion was wrong, or because eros is wrong, but when no agapè exists – and only eros, passion, or emotion exists – then you don't have much of a chance for a good marriage. It is said that you must find someone who is compatible, but that is only “phila.”

AGAPE RESTORED

All this is not good enough. Until “agapè” is restored, you cannot experience “one flesh.” So everything from Genesis concerning the reproduction of God can lead a person to agapè. Agapè is what this whole book is about.

When you study The Bible, keep asking yourself what must be restored? It is Agapè. The great love story is from a God who does things only for you because He loves you. It is a pleasure for Him to do so!

When you were young, you most likely played tennis, soccer, baseball, or football. Maybe you went dancing and did all the fun things young people enjoy. One of the nicest things my wife and I like to do is watch our grandchildren have a good time.

There are occasions when the family goes to the theatre. My daughter wants to see one movie, and my grandson wants to see a different show. My granddaughter wants to see yet another picture. So who do you think goes with my 8-year old granddaughter? It is such a pleasure to sit there and watch her laugh. It is the greatest fun that I could have.

THE BIRDHOUSE

Once I bought our granddaughter a little birdhouse kit. She was instructed how to assemble the birdhouse, and then paint it. My granddaughter lives next door, and so my wife bought a very small individual doll cake for her. She asked Rachel, our granddaughter, to come over and pick it up.

Our ulterior motive was to get a goodnight kiss, but Rachel was too busy building the birdhouse and painting it. We both were so happy she was enthralled with the birdhouse, so we just went to bed. That is how God is. There's nothing more delightful to God than seeing His children happy.

Everything was perfectly set down in The Garden of Eden. They had eternal life from The Tree of Life. They had all the food they needed. No harm could come to them. They had perfect weather. There were no weeds or thorns in their garden. It was paradise – The Garden of Eden.

In Hebrew, "Eden" means "pleasantness." This was The Garden of The Land of Pleasantness. The whole land was delightful. The garden was a paradise on earth, but then it was lost to them.

LOST EDEN

How did they lose it? God told them about two trees being in The Garden. There had to be two trees – or else Adam and Eve would not have had the free choice that God gave to them and gives to you. The opportunity to have free choice was the “key.”

Genesis 3:1-11 ¹Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? ²And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: ³But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. ⁴And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: ⁵For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. ⁶And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. ⁷And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons. ⁸And they heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden

in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God amongst the trees of the garden. ⁹And the Lord God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? ¹⁰And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. ¹¹And he said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat?

A RUNNING COMMENTARY

Now consider all these texts concerning the serpent up to the point where it is said: **“...lest ye die.”** The Hebrew word for “die” means “dying.” It is an active verb. In other words, they would not drop dead immediately when they ate the fruit. This was what Satan was trying to convey. The real meaning pointed to the process of dying.

Continuing with the text: **“⁴And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: ⁵For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.”**

The Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil had good in it, but it also had evil. Notice: **“⁶And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.”**

Now concentrate upon the first thing they realized. It was that the woman became a sex object. They knew they were naked. **“⁷And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked...”**

Up to this time, sex was an extremely private personal thing between husband and wife: **“...and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons.”** They were so aware sexually at this point that reproduction became a matter of sex – and not a matter of “agapè” love. Rather, it was a matter of “eros” love – or passionate love. In fact, there was so much passion that they were ashamed: **“⁸And they heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God amongst the trees of the garden.”**

The text says that God called out. Who called out? Was it really God? No, it was God's angel/messenger. It was the angel of The Lord speaking in God's place. **“¹⁰And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself.”** Notice that the first thing God said was: **“¹¹Who told thee that thou wast naked?”**

SATAN INTRODUCED

In Isaiah 14, the word “Satan” in the Hebrew is “Hay-lale.” “Hay-lale” means “bolster” and “egotistically driven.” Another root for “Hay-lale” is “gives in marriage.” So Satan has his system of marriage. It was not based on “agapè” love, but sex.

In The Law of God (Deuteronomy 24:1), you will find the word for “married” is “baal.” Baal is the god of fertility or sexuality. So Baal really is a lesser god of Satan who gives in marriage. Satan's method of marriage is purely sexual. It is to produce more children – whether legal or illegal. It is because he wants many children. Then, the illegitimate children would not be able to inherit.

Do not forget Inheritance is one element in God's Plan. In Galatians 4, the children of the flesh, who came through Hagar, are more than the children of THE RIGHTEOUS. So Satan's plan was to have more children by the unrighteous following his system of marriage, rather than God's system of marriage for The Righteous.

This is so important for you to study and fully understand. Hence, The True Way of reproducing God in His likeness under His system of marriage was lost.

Genesis 3:13-15 ¹³And the Lord God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat.
¹⁴And the Lord God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: ¹⁵And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.

God wanted to know what they had done. Paul explains that it was the woman who was deceived – and not the man.

EVE WAS DECEIVED

Since the woman was deceived, she became subject to the husband as her master. Because she was the deceived one, she now had to have someone rule over her as lord. Eve caused all the trouble that women have had since that time. **“¹⁴And the Lord God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life:..”**

Notice the penalty for Satan: **“¹⁵And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed;...”** Remember that Eve and her descendants were going to be The Church. Adam was to have been The Savior.

But now all the children born through Eve would have Satan as their enemy. This is the woman's penalty, generation after generation. It continues with: **“...it shall bruise thy head...”** This is a prophecy of Christ when He will defeat Satan: **“...and thou shalt bruise his heel.”**

As each child is born, Satan will always be at the heels of those children trying to deceive, and constantly leading them in an opposite way from God's Way. It does not stop until The Seed (Christ) shall come.

COMING OF THE SEED

The story from this time on has to do with the coming of The Seed, or The Prophecy about Christ. This is why Christ had to become The Savior. But since it is through “Inheritance,” it had to be a pure seed – or a Godly seed. Note this vital difference. The Seed (Christ) had to come from a legal Godly marriage in order “to Inherit” all things. It could not come from a satanic seed – and that type of marriage.

John 8:19-20 ¹⁹Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor my Father if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also. ²⁰These words spake Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him; for his hour was not yet come.

John introduced the account about The Sadducees and Pharisees accusing Christ of being a child of the devil. **“¹⁹Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor my Father if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also. ²⁰These words spake Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him; for his hour was not yet come.”**

These texts tell you that The Pharisees and The Sadducees didn't know The True God. Look at their response to what Jesus said:

John 8:33-34 ³³They answered him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how

sayest thou, Ye shall be made free? ³⁴Jesus answered them, Verily, verily I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant to sin.

They alleged that they were pure, from The Righteous Seed, and had a right to The Inheritance. They declared that they were never in bondage.

SATAN'S CHILDREN

Through Abraham, you are not a slave. If you come through Satan's children, then you are in bondage – a slave. When Jesus said: **“³⁴...Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin”** then that is the difference. If you are of The Pure Seed, then you will receive The Inheritance (Deuteronomy 21:17).

John 8:44 Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

What were those lusts? He had made Adam and Eve aware of sexuality and reproduction through sex in marriage, but without being one flesh. Notice the claim that: **“He was a murderer [talking about Cain through Abel]. from the beginning and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him [he is the darkness]. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own; for he is a liar, and the father of it.”**

Adam and Eve followed Satan as their father and his system of marriage. Always remember there are two types of marriage: God's and Satan's.

Genesis 3:16 Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee.

God, through an angel, told the serpent that He was to be the enemy of Eve's children. The old serpent is going to be clipping at the heels of every single human that is born. **"¹⁶Unto the woman, he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception;"** Women have had labor pains ever since.

PAIN OF CHILDBIRTH

Childbirth should have been a pleasant, joyful experience, right from the beginning. But rather, you find: **"...in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children** [various levels of pain]; **and thy desire shall be to thy husband..."** A woman from that time on became property. She was no longer one flesh or agape. She literally became the property of the man.

Throughout the ages, women have wondered why Solomon was allowed to have hundreds of wives – with 700 concubines, and still be God's selected king. It does not seem right. Well, Solomon didn't do anything wrong because he owned all those women. His error was in honoring his wives' and concubines' pagan religions.

In essence, you could enter into a satanic system of marriage that was based on sexuality, power, and possession. Until Christ paid the penalty, you were trapped by Satan's marriage. When Adam and Eve lost everything, they and their children had to wait approximately 4,000 years for Christ to REDEEM them. All the generations after them had to wait for Christ. So you have progressed through: (1) creation; (2) reproduction; (3) inheritance; (4) Godly marriage vs. Satan's marriage.

Matthew 18:11 For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.

The next element is (5) RESTORATION, or restoring that which is lost. The entire life of Christ until He died is about "restoration." It is restoring that which was lost. Jesus came and specifically explained why He had to come – and what His Purpose was. **"¹¹For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost"** (Matthew 18:11). The Son had to come to restore everything. How long would this take?

I John 3:8 He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

THE DEVIL'S SYSTEM

This explains the length of time involved. There are two types of life. **"⁸He that committeth sin is of the devil:..."** This is following the

devil's system which goes beyond marriage. This system goes beyond sin. He is trying to keep you from any type of "Righteousness."

Everything that God had intended and created, Satan attempts to change (remove and deceive). Today, as far as marriage is concerned, many just "live together" instead of going through legal marriage proceedings.

Some have asked if they can live together until they finish college, or earn enough money before they intend to get married. Fifty years ago, no one, except in Hollywood, would have had to ask that question. Almost everyone knew the answer was "No." In fact, it would have been unthinkable for them to ask such a question.

Marriage today seems no longer necessary. Satan saw to that. Some parents who love their children don't seem to mind if they skip "the marriage part." Perhaps they don't love their children enough. It is almost as if they want to get rid of the children they bore. In Satan's society, parents don't care about their children. Marriage is no longer necessary.

Satan is trying to keep society from doing anything THE WAY God intended. To understand God's principles, study the Greek word for "adultery" and you will discover it is "fornication." It is far better to marry than to sin and burn.

Genesis 4:6-7 ⁶And the Lord said unto Cain, Why art thou wroth? and why is thy countenance fallen? ⁷If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted? and if thou

**doest not well, sin lieth at the door. And unto thee shall
be his desire, and thou shalt rule over him.**

CAIN AND ABEL

After Adam and Eve left The Garden of Eden, you find the story about Cain and Abel. Cain was a vegetable farmer, while Abel was a shepherd. Abel offered sheep for his sacrifice. Cain offered fruits and vegetables.

Cain was upset because God (speaking through the angel) accepted Abel's offering over Cain's offering. (Note: after Adam and Eve sinned, they clothed themselves with fig leaves. It is possible that the fig tree may have been The Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil). But what did God do? He clothed them in animal skins (perhaps of a lamb), showing Christ as The Seed or The Sacrifice of animals.

The angel from God gave important guidelines to Cain and Abel. **“⁷If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted? And if thou doest not well, sin lieth at the door.”** Cain had to learn to master himself. Cain had to overcome jealousy and his carnal impulse. And because he could not control himself, he killed his brother. Cain had to leave, and go to The Land of Nod.

LAND OF NOD

“Nod” in the Hebrew means “wandering.” He was left to wander around to find God, but would not succeed. During that period, most people lived

almost a thousand years, with Methuselah being 969 years old. Before Cain left, God had to put a sign on him to protect him. This was because his future brothers and sisters born to Adam and Eve would want to kill Cain for having killed his brother, Abel.

During the thousand years, Cain's line started to obtain more wives and children. Lamech had Adah and Zillah. Lamech went out and killed more than Cain did. Lamech said if Cain was forgiven seven times, he wanted to be forgiven seventy times seven (Genesis 4:24).

Why did God put that mark on Cain and his lineage? It was because they were murderers and violent. Now go forward about 1500 years to the time just before the flood in Genesis 6. Did you ever wonder why God allowed man to live nearly 1,000 years of age?

II Peter 3:5-9 ⁵For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: ⁶Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished: ⁷But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men. ⁸But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. ⁹The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to usward, not

willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

The major gift God gave to Adam and Eve was free choice. Peter said there would be scoffers in the last days. **“⁵For this [speaking of the time of the flood] they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: ‘Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished:’”**

JUDGMENT BY FIRE

You, now, have judgment by both water and fire. Why did God give a thousand years for this process? It is because He is: **“⁹Not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.”** Through the line of Kings, God allowed the people to live a thousand years with free choice to decide what they thought was right or wrong. What did they choose?

Genesis 6:5 And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.

Every thought in their mind was to perpetrate evil continually. The world was racked with violence. So from The Garden of Eden with God's way of marriage being transgressed – to Satan's way of marriage, humankind followed the wrong choice.

NOAH AND THE FLOOD

Cain's seed all followed Satan's Way. Through over 1500 years, how many righteous seed were found? Only one – and that was Noah. Noah's father, Lamech, lived 777 years. Seven is the number of perfection. His son, Noah, was the only righteous one. Noah was perfect.

The word “perfect” does not mean that Noah never sinned. He drank too much and got drunk, but still Noah was blameless. In Matthew 5:48, Christ explains: **“Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.”** The word “perfect” means “blameless,” but not without sin. Every human being from the time of Adam and Eve has sinned and come short of The Glory of God.

The only way to be perfect and blameless is to make the right choice to follow faithfully the will of God to PERFECTION. If only Adam and Eve would have said “No” to Satan, then things would have been so different.

They should have desired The Tree of Life. Instead, humanity started off with a murderer, Cain, and his children – and then ended up with only one perfect man, Noah. At that juncture, God flooded the world (II Peter 3). He had given each person almost one thousand years to live and make the right choice. Their behavior never changed even though they suffered and had many sorrows. It, somehow, never made any difference.

So God destroyed them all – except Noah, his wife, and children. Man wouldn't follow God, even though man lived up to a thousand years. They had many opportunities to see sin only brought sorrow. So, God

decided to reduce man's life span to 120 years. By the time of David, He reduced it to 70 years of age. It may have been a favor to reduce the life span.

Job said that the day of his death was better than the day of his birth. He knew what he was talking about. Out of his mercy, God said that He gave a thousand years, 120 years, and later only 70 years to live. Still, those pre-flood people did not choose the right way to live – they never made the right choice.

REPENTANCE REQUIRED

Instead of following Satan, God wants you to repent and change your life. When God completed the physical universe, He said it was good. Adam and Eve could have saved mankind much heartache! They needed to reproduce themselves in God's likeness and character (Agapè).

From the time of the flood to the time of restoration, THE WHOLE STORY IN THE BIBLE IS ABOUT HOW CHRIST CAME TO SAVE THAT WHICH WAS LOST (Matthew 18). It is as simple as that. The Pure Seed does not exist until Abraham comes along. He was perfect in all his ways (based upon Inheritance).

RIGHTEOUS ABRAHAM

In the time of restoration, Abraham was the first one who was willing to obey. More and more, you can see how God duplicates Himself. In theology, it is called Duality of The Bible.

Abraham had the same choice that was given to Adam and Eve. Abraham was not required to keep The Law of Moses. More people in theology write articles to prove The Ten Commandments were in force before the time of Moses. This is not true! Sin was always commonplace, but humans were not guilty until God gave His Law (Romans 4:15).

Galatians tells you that The Law wasn't added for four hundred and thirty years after Abraham. There was no law at the time of Abraham. It was added 430 years after Abraham! He chose to follow God's will. Abraham kept The Commandments, Statutes, and Judgments in his heart, because he was accounted righteous by means of his Faith. Besides, he was willing to sacrifice his own son to show his willing heart.

Then the angel came to Abraham and said in Genesis 22:12, **“For now I know that thou fearest God, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son from me.”** To get to the point, Noah and Abraham reached the extreme limit that to know God they would have to bring themselves to REPENTANCE.

You can't repent on your own. A person only has free choice. Your choice is to decide to follow The Will of God – or the will of Satan. When you decide to do everything your way, then you are following Satan's way – most of the time.

SACRIFICE OF ISAAC

When Abraham was willing to offer Isaac, God knew Abraham would do what God wanted. And it was counted unto Abraham as Righteousness.

This is the whole story from Genesis to Revelation. The Tree of Life and The Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil were offered to Adam and Eve and to Abraham. Abraham was told in Genesis 15:13, “**Know of a surety that thy seed shall be a stranger in a land that is not theirs, and shall serve them; and they shall afflict them four hundred years;...**” After those 430 years, Moses was a Prophet, like Christ, who would lead them.

John 5:39 Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me.

Jesus said to ³⁹**Search the scriptures;...** Only The Old Testament Scriptures were available at that time since The New Testament wasn't written yet. The New Testament is The Son speaking to mankind. The Old Testament is The Word speaking to you.

The pure seed came from Eve (Genesis 3:15) after Noah, through Abraham. Abraham made that choice. Therefore he was Righteous, and The Covenant of Promise was given to Abraham as an Inheritance through His Seed, Christ. Christ gives The Promises in The Scriptures as they testify of Him.

John 5:45-46 ⁴⁵Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust. ⁴⁶For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for he wrote of me.

The Law of Moses was The Old Covenant. Those people trusted in The Old Covenant, and they said to Christ: "We are the seed of Abraham."

Christ said to forget whose seed you came from because what The Scriptures do, is testify of Me. You trusted Moses, and now he is the one who is going to accuse you – because The Whole Purpose of The Law of Moses was to give the same choice that Adam and Eve had been given. **"⁴⁶For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for he wrote of me."**

AN EXPRESSION OF CHRIST

The Law is an expression of Christ, but it was, also, A BONDAGE OF WORKS WITH A CURSE. Some Christians believe that "under The Law" means under the penalty. Not one Scripture tells you that under The Law is "the penalty." The penalty is to be under the curse. That is the penalty.

In Galatians 3:10, Paul said, **"For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse:..."** The works are under the curse. Under the Law means you accepted His administration as a schoolmaster, leading you to Eternal Life.

Christ said The Law doesn't give you Eternal Life, but it speaks of Him or Christ. Later, in Galatians, you see it "was added" because of sin, until The Seed should come (Christ). It was a Law that was based on people who needed it because they were unrepentant.

I Timothy 1:6-9 ⁶From which some having swerved have turned aside unto vain jangling; ⁷Desiring to be teachers of the law; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm. ⁸But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully; ⁹Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers.

These people are arguing about which day is The Passover – and the time of Pentecost. Many today are still arguing about it! **“⁸But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully;...”** This is the intended purpose God had. Why did God add The Law? It was because of transgression.

LAW CREATED FOR WHOM?

How is The Law used lawfully? **“⁹Knowing this, that the law is not made for [whom?] a righteous man,..”** NOAH AND ABRAHAM WERE RIGHTEOUS, SO THE LAW DIDN'T APPLY TO THEM. But, for whom was The Law given? It was **“...for the lawless and disobedient,..”** The Law was made for **“the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers.”** Do you want to be under The Law? Not if you are striving to be like Christ.

When Abraham was given The Abrahamic Promise of Christ, it was through him that all nations would be blessed. It was required to go

through the seed of Abraham and The Law of Inheritance. One of the greatest key elements of God is "Inheritance." Abraham transferred The Inheritance to Isaac since Isaac allowed himself to be sacrificed, just like Christ.

ELIEZER'S MISSION

Read the account of Isaac's marriage where Eliezer, the servant in Genesis 26, is sent by the father who says he didn't want Isaac to take a wife from the seed of the nations of that region. Instead he was to take a wife from his own family (his Inheritance).

Eliezer goes on his mission, and the first thing he asks God is how will he know the identity of the right woman. He is told, "The woman who comes to this well and gives you the water." And along came Rebekah. She gave him the water. He thanked God. They went to the first-born, Laban, who was in the position of the father. This was because the father was dead. He had the authority to permit Eliezer to take his sister, Rebekah, to be the bride of Isaac. But he asked Rebekah, "Are you willing to go?"

So this was not a forced marriage, although he could have told her to go, and she would have been required to – because they were under Satan's system of marriage. She was a possession. She was to be sold, and her husband would become the master. Instead, Rebekah said she would go. They never saw each other, and yet she went to marry Isaac. This became the type of marriage that God set forth to restore.

Study John 2 through John 4. In John 2, the first miracle Christ performed was at the marriage of Cana. It was before His time to perform miracles, and He asked His mother, in John 2, “**4Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come.** **5His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do it.**”

MIRACLE AT CANA

So the governor of the feast brought the firkins, which were large water jars for purification. They were to purify people for the marriage, and Christ said, “**Fill the waterpots with water.**” And the water turned into wine. It was the very best wine, and there was plenty left over. There was enough for everyone. Who is God saving? It is everyone. In John 3, when asked who He was, Jesus replies: “**A friend of the Bridegroom.**”

After this, Jesus Christ went to Samaria. He said, “**It must be that I go to Samaria**” (which was a Gentile land). He went to the Samaritan woman and asked for a drink of water as Eliezer had asked. Christ asks: “Where is your husband?” She answered: “I have no husband.” She was right. She had five husbands. Christ was forgiving her.

Then Christ says, “Look, I can give you water and you can have everlasting life.” This ties right into Genesis 24 and the marriage of Isaac. Christ now was living, and He had to go through Samaria (Gentiles) since His own people rejected Him because of The Law.

From the time of Moses to when God dealt with Israel as His nation (Hosea 2), He made a marriage contract. That contract was signed by

blood, but why? Without blood, there is no remission of sins. In Deuteronomy 30, Moses said: “¹⁵**See, I have set before thee this day life and good and death and evil;**” Adam and Eve had the same choice as The Children of Israel, to choose life or death. Israelites and Adam and Eve, both, had a choice of choosing blessings or cursing, life or death. The people had the same choice.

THE SAMARITAN WOMAN

Christ was now telling the Samaritan Gentile woman that the day is coming when she will no longer worship The Father in Jerusalem or in Samaria. She will worship The Father in Spirit. There will be A New Marriage Covenant, which is A New Marriage Agreement. He said that The Father seeks those who will worship Him in Spirit, and not in the works of The Law.

Now, do you understand the real story of the Samaritan woman? Israel (The Jews) did not repent but rejected Christ. Go all the way from Moses through all of Samuel – to The Chronicles and Kings. There you will find they kept rejecting Him until they were taken into captivity. Do you see how the story flows?

Matthew 18:11: For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.

Jesus picked a nation who would be His witness. God chose Israel because they came through The Inheritance (pure seed) and were to be His

Witness, Bride, and The Church. And when they rejected Christ, He told them they would be last (originally they were to be first) in The Kingdom.

So, Christ went to The Samaritans (The Gentiles). This was Christ coming to restore that which is lost in Matthew 18: **“¹¹For the Son of man [Christ] is come to save that which was lost.”** This covers almost 4,000 years. Now it has been almost 2,000 years since Christ gave His life for all mankind.

Colossians 1:27 To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory:

PASSOVER SYMBOLS

The Passover symbols were changed from the lamb, to the bread and wine. The wine symbolized His blood. This New Covenant changed The Law from The Letter (works) to The Spirit.

The bread symbolized His Body. Now when you are “in Christ (the mystery of God) in Colossians 1:27, Christ is in you, your Husband. This is The New Covenant. It is a contract, which is A SPIRITUAL AGREEMENT.

Hebrews 7:14 For it is evident that our Lord sprang out of Juda; of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priesthood.

In Hebrews 7:14, there was a change in The Priesthood, to Melchizedek. There was a change of The Law. That Law was changed from The Letter of The Law to God, by writing His Law in your hearts. It is The Royal Law. He writes that Law in your hearts by His Bride (Church) being married to The Groom (Christ).

You are “at one” with Christ. The Bride will have Christ’s character, and True Marriage will finally be restored. Agapè (God’s love) is the fulfillment (completion) of The Law (Romans 13:10).

All this brings you back to the sixth element, which was mentioned earlier: REDEMPTION AND RELEASE. Remember, the prior elements are: (1) Creation; (2) Godly Reproduction; (3) Inheritance; (4) Godly Marriage, and (5) Restoration.

Christ was The Seed to bring that Restoration. Christ had to give His life to restore the marriage. By the spilling of blood came the forgiveness of sin – and the sixth element, salvation (given in two parts).

REDEMPTION AND RELEASE

One part of the sixth element is (6A) Redemption, while the other is (6B) Release. You are Saved by one of two ways. You are either Saved by Christ Redeeming you through the proper marriage becoming at “One” with Him, or you are going to be Released from those sins. Once Redemption is fulfilled, and once Release is given, then (7) The Kingdom of God comes – along with The New Heaven and New Earth.

Job 19:25-26 ²⁵**For I know that my redeemer liveth, and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth:**
²⁶**And though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God:**

Job knew this story over 3,500 years ago. After all his troubles, Job was being picked on by his friends. Job said: “²⁵**For I know that my redeemer liveth, and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth** [talking about Christ]: ²⁶**And though after my skin worms destroy this body** [this tabernacle]: **yet in my flesh** [at the resurrection] **shall I see God:...**” Job knew he was going to be REDEEMED. Why must Job be redeemed? It was because Job was sold to Satan, so Christ had to REDEEM HIM.

I John 3:8 He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

The reason for The Son of God is: “**that he might destroy the works of the devil.**” What did the devil do? He brought the world envy, lust, murder, sorrow, and death. He destroyed marriage. He kept you from being “One with God.”

Christ came to destroy Satan's works, and He also brought everything to make The Restoration. Christ will Save you at Passover when you take the wine (His blood), and the bread (His body). The reason the blood must be employed is because Life is in the blood. Christ had to shed His

blood. He had to sacrifice His Body because each of you must become "one body" with Him to restore that original marriage of agapè.

In repenting, you are saying, "God, I want your will, not mine." In Ephesians 5, Christ is your Husband by contract! Christ's responsibility is to make you Holy, without spot, or wrinkle, and completely unblemished. That is Christ's job. So when you drink that wine and eat that bread at The Passover, you are signing The Marriage Agreement.

Christ's Promise to you is He will put God in you. For you to become One with God, His Law must be in your hearts and minds. That can only happen in one of two ways: (1) He must Redeem you (Leviticus 25) which is symbolized by The Jubilee Year, which is The Restoration of The Sabbath; or else (2) finally, entering into God's rest. The Jubilee Year is The Marriage Feast, and The Lamb's Book of Life. The Book of the Life of The Lamb is the story of The Marriage of The Lamb to His wife (The Church).

Christ first became agapè as The Word, and now you can become agapè as The Word. You become One with God, and God has reproduced Himself. During The Millennium, at the time of The Feast of Tabernacles, all Israel will be Saved (Read Ezekiel 37).

EVERYONE RESURRECTED

Everyone who ever lived will be resurrected back to human life and live for 100 years (Isaiah 65:20). Whether an old man or a child, everyone will live out the 100 years. They won't have 1000 years to live, but only 100,

and they have to keep The Law because they were sinners, and unrepentant. As they repent, they become Sons of God. Israel is supposed to be the first among nations, and they are the first among other nations even though they were called last.

When The Bride was called, they were called from all nations – not just from one nation. Who is The Bride? The Church is The Bride, because Romans 2 states that you are not circumcised according to promises made to Abraham – but only if you are circumcised in heart. That is God's Law written in your heart.

So, unless Israel and The Gentiles have circumcision of the heart, they cannot be The Bride. You can only be The Bride through the time of Pentecost, when God's Spirit was given. All who are resurrected in the first resurrection become The Bride of Christ. But Israel hasn't been resurrected yet. Notice there were 144,000 who came out of The Tribulation.

Each of the pearly gates in New Jerusalem represents one of The Tribes of Israel. So all The Prophets, Abraham, Isaac, Moses, and all who were willing to follow God – are going to be in that First Resurrection.

In the story about Lazarus and the rich man, the rich man did not qualify for the first resurrection. The rich man looks up and sees Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and Lazarus in the first resurrection. Only The Bride is in the first resurrection. When Israel is Saved entirely as a nation, they are The Guests at Christ's wedding to The Church (His Bride). This includes

other nations who are Saved. All of them are Redeemed until The Marriage Feast.

MARRIAGE FEAST

At The Marriage Feast, redemption is no longer an issue. After that, Christ redeems no one. To redeem is to buy back ahead of time. This compares with The Book of Ruth where Naomi, who owned the parcel of land, and with Boaz who was of The Inheritance through The Seed. Boaz bought the land, and with it he bought Ruth, who was a Gentile – just like the Samaritan woman.

Once The Marriage Feast is over, it is over. Redemption is over at the time of The Jubilee. You can only be “Released.” Redemption is buying you back because of false marriage. It is for The Wedding – and The Wedding Feast of The Groom and The Bride.

Once you come to The Wedding Feast, if you don't have on the right clothes, you cannot enter. But once that Marriage Feast is completed, The Release comes – and all debts are forgiven. How are they forgiven? By being thrown in The Lake of Fire – and they readily repent there. There is no more debt.

And so the whole story of The Bible ends in I Corinthians 15:55: **“Oh death where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?”** The works of Satan are over and done with. The seventh element is The Kingdom of God. The seven elements have been explained.

Now you know the whole story of The Bible. When you read it, you should understand every major part. When you read the genealogy that can be so tiring, it will have a greater meaning – telling you about The Inheritance (The Pure Seed).

Summarizing THE SEVEN ELEMENTS in God's mind:

1. Creation
2. Godly Reproduction
3. Inheritance
4. Godly Marriage
5. Restoration
6. Salvation
 - a. Redemption
 - b. Release
7. Kingdom of God

USE THESE SEVEN ELEMENTS OF GOD'S MIND WHEN STUDYING THE WORD OF GOD – AND YOUR UNDERSTANDING OF GOD'S RICHES WILL SPUR YOU ON TO A GREATER SPIRITUAL CHRISTIAN GROWTH!

CHAPTER 7

THE TRUE GOSPEL

Most Bibles have the words “The Holy Bible” printed on the cover. Now picture your Bible as a Puzzle Box. Inside the box are thousands and thousands of pieces that must be properly assembled. Most puzzle boxes have a picture of the puzzle on the box, in order to give you an idea of exactly how to put the puzzle together. But your Bible has no picture to guide you.

Inside The Bible are little bits and pieces of truth – a little here – and a little there. These are pieces, which can help you put the picture together, and show you The Plan God has in store for you.

If you put most of the major pieces together, you will be able to understand God’s Purpose for His Creation. God calls these pieces of the puzzle: **“The mysteries of the Kingdom of Heaven”** (Matthew 13:11).

The word “Holy” means “clean” or “unblemished,” and the word “Bible” is from the Greek word, “biblos”, meaning “book.” The Holy Bible contains “Truthful Books.” When you see the complete picture of The Plan of God, you would start with Adam and Eve, then proceed through The Old Testament, and then come to The New Testament. The last

increments would involve Jesus Christ, Jerusalem, and then proceed to The Apostles and Revelation.

THOUSANDS OF PUZZLE PIECES

So, The Bible holds thousands of different pieces, waiting for you to place them (as God directs) into perfect order. First, you would attempt to put the large pieces together.

Once the major pieces are properly anchored, then you will be able to assemble the smaller pieces on your own. As you continue to study your Bible, and through prayer, God will reveal more and more to you.

As with every puzzle, you must have a starting point. What is The True Gospel? In the yellow pages, you can look up churches, and you will find a multitude of different names – including Four Square Gospel or Full Gospel. Now, you will begin to learn the true meaning of the word “Gospel.”

Paul's Epistle to The Galatians is all about The Gospel. In most cases, scribes wrote Paul's Epistles as he dictated what they should write. In this particular case, Paul was so upset that he wrote The Letter to The Galatians with his very own handwriting.

**Galatians 6:11 Ye see how large a letter I have written
unto you with mine own hand.**

Paul wanted them to know the extent of the conflict he was having. He was visibly upset about the subject he was covering. Galatia is the

southern part of what is called Turkey today. At one time it was called Asia Minor. Basically, it was the location for the first evangelistic journey of Paul – as he traveled to establish churches.

PREACHING THE GOSPEL

Over the years, as Paul continued preaching The Gospel, he started to hear that the people in Galatia (southern Turkey or Asia Minor) were beginning to follow something different from what he had originally taught them. This upset him greatly. Another name for The Letter to The Galatians could be called “The True Gospel.” The Book of Galatians tells you where to look when searching for The True Gospel.

Galatians 1:1-12 ¹Paul, an Apostle, (not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead;) ²And all the brethren which are with me, unto the churches of Galatia: ³Grace be to you and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ, ⁴Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father: ⁵To whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen. ⁶I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel: ⁷Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ. ⁸But though we, or an angel from

heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed. ⁹As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received, let him be accursed. ¹⁰For do I now persuade men, or God? Or do I seek to please men? For if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ. ¹¹But I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me is not after man. ¹²For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.

Paul was irate, angry, and highly affected when he wrote this letter. Paul starts by telling The Galatians that he is an Apostle – but not one who is made by men. Paul did not receive The True Gospel from any man – or from any of The Apostles. It came directly by revelation.

THE FIRST LESSON

This is the first lesson that Paul tried to get across to them. He explains how the words he preached were not given to him by a human being – or from a human conference, “(¹Neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead;)” Through this letter, Paul is telling you to whom he is writing. He says: “²And all the brethren which are with me.”

There were those who were not with him, but he was writing only to those who were still following what he taught. Notice that he said: ²“Unto the

churches of Galatia: ³Grace be to you and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ, ⁴Who gave himself for our sins that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God.” It is God’s Will to SAVE THE WORLD, so notice: **“and our Father: ⁵To whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.”**

Then Paul states: **“⁶I marvel that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ unto another gospel:”** Now the critical key is that they had received a “gift,” and yet, they turned to another “gospel” **“⁷which is not another;”** This is because it is not even considered to be a “gospel” – in that sense of the word. Paul shows that: **“there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ.”**

The word “pervert” is a good English translation, but it does not tell the full story of the Greek meaning. The Greek root for the word “pervert” is “to turn” or “to reverse.” This different “gospel” was affecting The Galatians to the point that they were going backwards – instead of growing Spiritually. Paul was so concerned that he called for a curse to be placed on those teachers, as well as, on any Christians, if they follow another “gospel.”

ANOTHER GOSPEL?

Many of The Christians were following another Gospel. Paul felt it was unthinkable for them to follow another Gospel, so soon after Paul had

explained The True Gospel to them. Perhaps 2,000 years later, you can understand why there can be thousands of variations of The Gospel.

This phenomenon was amazing, because it was so soon after Paul had been there in person, and had spoken to The Galatians. He said: **“¹⁰For do I now persuade men, or God? Or do I seek to please men? For if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.”**

Paul's purpose was not to please men. He said: **“¹¹But I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me is not after man. For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the Revelation of Jesus Christ.”** The True Gospel came straight from Jesus Christ. Paul then explains the history of how he received The True Gospel directly from Christ.

Galatians 1:18-19 ¹⁸Then after three years I went up to Jerusalem to see Peter, and abode with him fifteen days.

¹⁹But other of the Apostles saw I none, save James the Lord's brother.

Paul was converted on the road to Damascus. He was blinded at this time, but his eyesight was restored later. Paul was personally taught The True Gospel by Jesus Christ – and not by any man.

When Paul returned to the region of Syria and Cilicia, this was the time when the people learned that he had been converted to Christianity. Paul continues with his account:

Galatians 2:1-4 ¹Then fourteen years after I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, and took Titus with me also. ²And I went up by revelation, and communicated unto them that gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but privately to them which were of reputation, lest by any means I should run, or had run, in vain. ³But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised: ⁴And that because of false brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage:

17 YEARS

Paul preached this Gospel for seventeen years. This was for three years after his conversion. He spent two weeks with Peter – and then fourteen years more, for a total of about seventeen years. **“¹After I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas and took Titus with me also. ²And I went up by revelation.”** Christ wanted him to go.

Paul didn't want The Apostles or teachers to get into each other's way – or to cause dissention among themselves: **“³But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised.”** Barnabas, was a Jew, and Titus, was a Greek. The problem was circumcision, although this historical rite was just the beginning of the problem.

The Law was, also, a part of the controversy to be discussed. Eventually,

you will find that there are two types of "gospels." This was based on: **"⁴And that because of false brethren unawares brought in,..."** False teachers (or brethren) were preaching another "gospel." These people: **"...came in privily to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage:"**

The false brethren preached that these believers must be Circumcised. But Circumcision produced only a form of slavery instead of liberty. With Circumcision, The Jews wanted The Gentile Christians to keep The Whole Law of Moses (Acts 15:5).

Acts 15:5 But there rose up certain of the sect of the Pharisees which believed, saying, That it was needful to circumcise them, and to command them to keep the law of Moses.

TRUE FREEDOM

As God reveals His Plan for Christians, you learn so much more about true freedom. In The United States, Americans talk about living in a free society. Be assured, that no one knows the true meaning of freedom until they have received true Christianity.

God's way is total liberty and complete freedom. God does not impose works that remove your freedom. You will come to see The True Gospel is not a religion (religious ceremony), but a way of living your Christian life.

Galatians 2:5-10 ⁵To whom we gave place by subjection, no, not for an hour; that the truth of the gospel might continue with you. ⁶But of these who seemed to be somewhat, (whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me: God accepteth no man's person:) for they who seemed to be somewhat in conference added nothing to me: ⁷But contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter; ⁸ (For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the Apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me toward the Gentiles;) ⁹And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we should go unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision. ¹⁰Only they would that we should remember the poor; the same which I also was forward to do.

Paul said that he had not given place by subjection to these teachers at all. What he spoke was "The Truth". It was The True Gospel, and he desired: **"the gospel might continue with you."** He was mostly concerned about the teachers **"⁶...who seemed to be somewhat,...."**

The teachers may have acted like the leaders of these people – but they were not: **"(whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me:..."**

Paul didn't care if it was Peter, John, or James. He said that it: **“Makes no difference to me. God accepteth no man's person:)”**

Paul stated that he did not preach what any man told him; but rather he preached what Christ told him to preach. But **“...in conference,...”** these teachers were discussing the pros of Circumcision and The Law. Paul said: these men: **“Added nothing to me....”**

TWO GOSPELS

Here are the two gospels: **“⁷...when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter;...”** Notice, that both are the same gospel, but one gospel makes you go backward, while the other gospel helps you to grow Spiritually. Isn't this ironic? Peter was given the responsibility of The Gospel of The Circumcision (to The Jews), but Paul was given The Gospel to The Uncircumcision (to The Gentiles).

When these pieces of the puzzle are put together, the result will become very plain. Paul said: **“⁸For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the Apostleship of the circumcision....”** So, Paul is stating that even though Peter was the first, Peter could never have been the alleged pope of Rome – because Peter is The Apostle to The Circumcision (The Israelites). Peter was given the job of converting The Tribes of Israel.

Only Paul could have been the pope of Rome, since Paul was given the job of converting The Gentiles. Notice: **“⁸the same was mighty in me toward the Gentiles:)”** This shows that Peter's teachings were The

Gospel of The Circumcision, which was effective in converting Israelites to Christ.

Paul was effective when he was sent to “the uncircumcision.” **“⁹And when James, Cephas [Peter], and John, who seemed to be pillars [leaders] perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we should go unto the heathen,”**

The heathen are The Gentiles – or the remainder of the peoples of the world. There are only two groups of people. You are either an Israelite (12 Tribes of Israel – “the circumcised”) to whom The Promise was made, or else you are one of the rest of the world (“the uncircumcised” — Gentiles).

So Paul’s Apostleship was to all the others of the world: **“We should go unto the heathen, [uncircumcised] and they unto the circumcision [The 12 Tribes].”** Peter specifically had to remain The Apostle to The Circumcision for a very good reason.

Acts 15:24-25 ²⁴Forasmuch as we have heard, that certain which went out from us have troubled you with words, subverting your souls, saying, Ye must be circumcised, and keep the law: to whom we gave no such commandment: ²⁵It seemed good unto us, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men unto you with our beloved Barnabas and Paul,

The Apostles wrote a letter to The Gentile Christians stating their unanimous agreement of what Gentile Christians were obligated to do as believers. They said, **“²⁵It seemed good unto us, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men unto you.”** This was done with this letter that explained how some went out from us and said: **“²⁴ye must be circumcised, and keep the law: to whom we gave no such commandment”** (Acts 15:24-25). Notice the following context:

Matthew 16:15-19 ¹⁵He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? ¹⁶And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the son of the living God. ¹⁷And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. ¹⁸And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. ¹⁹And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

Why were these two Apostles given two different Gospels (Israel and Gentile) with which to work with and teach? The answer begins with: **“¹⁵He [Jesus] “saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am?”** And Peter said: **“¹⁶Thou art the Christ, the son of the living God.”** Then, Christ said to him: **“¹⁷Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and**

blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. ¹⁸**And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter....**” The repetition is vital.

THE LITTLE STONE

Peter is a little pebble, stone, or “petros.” But “**...upon this rock** [boulder: on Christ]) **I will build my church; and the gates of hell** [the grave] **shall not prevail against it.**” This is a very significant statement. Why did Jesus say death would not prevail? What did Christ say to Peter? **“¹⁹And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven;”**

Peter had received a special commission which the other Apostles did not receive. It was because he recognized that Christ was The Son of God. Christ told him: **“¹⁹I will give you the keys to the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.”**

What does that mean? It means that God commissioned Peter TO OPEN THE WAY INTO HIS KINGDOM FOR THE GENTILES. He had the keys. Peter converted the first Gentile. Christ had Peter (not Paul) convert the first Gentile. Peter obtained the key to unlock the door to The Kingdom of God for The Gentiles. Peter, The Apostle who God used in Acts 10, remembered the vision of all the unclean animals – which came forth in vision three times.

God repeatedly told Peter to eat, by saying: **“Don’t take what God has**

cleansed and call it unclean.” God was dealing directly with The Apostle Peter who had obtained “the key” to The Kingdom for The Gentiles! Hence The Gentiles were no longer considered as common, unclean, or unworthy to know God's Plan. Now, Gentiles could, also, be converted. So God chose Peter as The Apostle to open The Way to God's Kingdom.

Acts 10:28 And he said unto them Ye know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to keep company, or come unto one of another nation; but God hath shewed me that I should not call any man common or unclean.

SIGNIFICANCE OF CORNELIUS

Peter was told what his dream meant. Peter was the one chosen to baptize Cornelius, the first Gentile. God not only picked a Gentile, but, in fact, he was a Roman. Furthermore, he selected a military man, as the first Gentile to be converted. The text says: “²⁸**And he [Peter] said unto them, Ye know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to keep company, or come unto one of another nation; but God hath shewed me that I should not call any man common or unclean.”**

Peter was the only Apostle who could open the door for The Gentiles. Only Peter was given that key. So, The Apostle Peter did, indeed, open the door for the rest of the world of Gentiles to inherit The Kingdom of God.

In Galatians, Christ told Peter that he would receive the keys to unlock the way into The Kingdom of God. Christ would bind it in heaven and on earth – when Peter accepted Cornelius. Peter was used to convert Cornelius. He was the first Apostle responsible for unlocking the door for Gentiles to come to The Kingdom of God.

On the other hand, Paul was called out of season and was The Apostle to The Uncircumcision. (Peter had the key to open that door to The Uncircumcision.) Those who were under The Apostle Paul were under The Gospel of Grace. Peter was working with people who were under The Gospel of Circumcision (Israelites), which reversed the process of The Spiritual Gospel of The Kingdom.

HOW WAS THE GOSPEL REVERSED?

Galatians 2:11-15 ¹¹But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed. ¹²For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision. ¹³And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him; insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation. ¹⁴But when I saw that they walked not uprightly according to the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter before them all, If thou, being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles,

and not as do the Jews, why compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews? ¹⁵We who are Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

Still, Peter was afraid of The Circumcision Group. Most Christians at that time were Jews. In Antioch, they came together in a Christian gathering where The Jews (A Tribe of Israel) of The Circumcision Party, and Gentiles (the rest of the world, The Uncircumcised), were both in attendance.

Peter would not have anything to do with The Gentiles, so Paul stood up and told him “off” by saying: **“¹⁴If thou, being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles...”** So, Peter was not following The Gospel of The Circumcision, himself. He was following The Gospel of The Uncircumcision in his Christian life. In essence, Paul asked: **“How can you, Peter, be like that?”**

Peter was afraid to talk to The Gentiles when The Circumcision Party was on location – but in private he would live just like The Gospel of The Uncircumcision (to The Gentiles). Peter was humbled by the incident, and accepted Paul's admonition. Now get this piece of the puzzle. Essentially, Paul was saying: **“Look, there are two gospels.”**

There is The Gospel of Circumcision (to Israel), and there is The Gospel of Uncircumcision (to The Gentiles). One requires you to be circumcised because it means something. In 70 A.D., The Temple was destroyed by Titus, Emperor of Rome, and that ceased The Gospel of Circumcision – or The Old Covenant (Hebrews 8:13).

DECISION FROM JERUSALEM

After the matter was discussed, The Apostles got together and said: **“Paul, they don’t have to be circumcised; you are doing the right thing. Only remember the poor.”**

James 1:26-27 ²⁶**If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man’s religion is vain.** ²⁷**Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.**

During the 15 days, Paul spoke not only with Peter – but to James, also. In James 1:26, you will find what true Christian religion really is. The Jewish religion is The Gospel of The Circumcision (Works of The Law). In Galatians 1, Christianity is not a religion. The Gospel of the Uncircumcision is not a religion. The Circumcision Gospel was a Jewish religion (based on works).

The Apostle James tells you about the only types of works that Christians should perform. Any other works carry a curse because they are man-made religions. If your religion is based on works, then you must keep every bit of The Law so as not to be under the curse (James 2:10). **“²⁶If any man among you seem to be religious,...”** The Greek definition of “religion” means “ceremonial” or “pious.”

How do you conduct yourself? Is it piously? How can you appear physically pious? Humanity as a whole, and Christians in particular, can appear pious – or religious. They may observe Easter, with its eggs and rabbits, or keep Christmas, with its decorated tree, and passing presents among themselves. Or, it could be by means of removing all leavened bread from your houses during The Days of Unleavened Bread. It could be the taking of the barley (wheat) harvest, and bringing it on Pentecost.

All of these practices represent The Gospel of Circumcision (which demanded human works). These are the only works that some Christians think they should do religiously. These are the outward works that other people may see you do in your religious practice. James said: **“Look I will show you my faith by my works. Faith without works is dead.”**

What type of works should there be? **“²⁶If any man among you seem to be religious [piously acting like a Christian] and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion is vain.”** This show of piety is vain. Rather: **“²⁷Pure religion”** is something else.

James 1:27 Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

MAN-MADE RELIGIONS

Man-made religions allow a person to show his religion by going to church, tithing, keeping pagan holidays, and doing all sorts of physical

works. It is human effort to prove individual righteousness to themselves, to others, and to their God. During The Middle Ages, The Catholics were selling bones and relics to gain access to The Kingdom of God.

Martin Luther was disturbed because everything had to do with what you appeared to do righteously before God. These were works that man did of his own accord – in order to be a Christian. It bothered Martin Luther so much that he broke off, and split into Protestantism. So, the world ended up with hundreds of different denominations of Protestantism, while The Jews comprise the Orthodox, as well as Reformed and Conservative groupings.

Each group divides and splits continually. The reason there are so many Judean/Christian denominations is that they are all based on human works. This is mankind showing his own form of righteousness – but not Christ (Matthew 6:33). Every argument promoting your religion concerns what you do or don't do. It is what seems right in a person's own eyes.

FATHERLESS AND WIDOWS

James tells very plainly that if you want to be a Christian with pure religion (which is undefiled and not corrupted), then you must “**visit the fatherless and widows.**” So, a Christian's obligation is to take care of the orphans and widows – because those orphans have no inheritance. Many widows and orphans have no one to lean upon.

Paul was told to remember the poor. This is a true Christian work. This is

a physical activity that a Christian must do. The words: **“in their affliction”** apply to those who have not had their needs cared for. It goes on: **“and to keep himself unspotted from the world.”**

As a Christian, to show true Christianity, you must control your mouth. Stop judging people. Stop accusing others. Be forgiving, as Christ was. Take care of the poor. Don't steal, or covet. Don't be idolatrous, and don't kill. Keep yourself from sinning.

That is it. There are no other physical religious requirements. There are no other works. Ultimately, “Agapè” (love) fulfills all of God's works.

Mark 10:17 And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?

Christ was asked a very significant question: **“¹⁷What must I do to inherit eternal life.”** Christ said: **“Keep; the commandments, and don't sin.”** Do you believe Jesus?

THE SABBATH SHADOW

The Sabbath is the only Commandment that doesn't tell you what sin is. It is a shadow of something to come. Christians keep The Sabbath by doing good works – just like Christ performed on that day. If you love God (the first three Commandments), then you will love your neighbor as yourself. So in this sense, The Sabbath is The Gospel.

The Sabbath Rest is The Gospel. Again, consider that, as a Christian from a standpoint of works, what must you do? The answer is to control your mouth, give to the poor, and don't sin. That is it.

Mark 10:20-21 ²⁰And he answered and said unto him, **Master, all these have I observed from my youth.** ²¹Then Jesus beholding him loved him, and said unto him, **One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, take up thy cross, and follow me.**

The rich man said: ²⁰**Master, all these have I observed from my youth.** Christ loved him because the man did not sin. The rich man added: **“What do I lack?”** Did Christ ask if he took unleavened bread out during Unleavened Bread Days? Did Christ inquire if he went to a temporary housing during The Feast of Tabernacles? Did Christ ask if he kept Easter or Christmas holy? No.

Instead Christ said: ²¹**sell whatsoever thou hast, and give it to the poor.** Christian works are equal to: Don't accuse, help the poor, and don't sin!

Luke 19:1-9 ¹And Jesus entered and passed through Jericho. ²And, behold, there was a man named Zacchaeus, which was the chief among the publicans, and he was rich. ³And he sought to see Jesus who he

was; and could not for the press, because he was little of stature. ⁴And he ran before, and climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him: for he was to pass that way. ⁵And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and saw him, and said unto him, Zacchaeus, make haste, and come down; for to day I must abide at thy house. ⁶And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully. ⁷And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner. ⁸And Zacchaeus stood, and said unto the Lord; Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him fourfold. ⁹And Jesus said unto him, This day is salvation come to this house, forsomuch as he also is a son of Abraham.

THE RICH PUBLICAN

In Luke 19:1-9, Christ went to a rich publican's house. The rich man, Zacchaeus, gave half of his wealth to the poor – and if any thought he was dishonest, Zacchaeus said he would give back four times the amount. Christ said this man had Salvation (Luke 1:9). No other works were required of him. Do you believe Jesus Christ?

Galatians 2:15-21 ¹⁵We who are Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles, ¹⁶Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of

Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for the works of the law shall no flesh be justified. ¹⁷But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid. ¹⁸For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor. ¹⁹For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God. ²⁰I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me. ²¹I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

What is Christianity? It is not a religion. It's not the keeping of days or years or physical things that people do. It only concerns Spiritual change. In John 4, Christ said that Christians worship God "Spiritually" – and not by physical works! When you get down to The Gospel, it is all about The Kingdom of God. Most Christians don't know what The Kingdom of God is. "¹⁵**We who are Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles.**"

The Jews, by keeping The Law, were not sinners like The Gentiles who did not know The Law. "¹⁶**Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law...**" You are not forgiven of your sins by keeping any physical works of The Law, but rather: "...by the faith of Jesus Christ,

even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ.”

Paul said this for a specific reason. You see the promise of The Gospel although you will see there are still two Gospels – old and new. The Jews, The Circumcision, had a different Gospel than The Gentiles, the Uncircumcision, who did not have to keep The Letter of The Law

HOW CHRISTIANS READ GALATIANS

Many Christians read Galatians and think Paul was only saying they shouldn't be “circumcised.” Not so. Circumcision is just THE BEGINNING OF THE WORKS. In Acts 15, Circumcision and The Law of Moses are not required. The word “works” is plural. It means “ergon” in Greek – which is any kind of “religious work” – whether of The Law, of paganism, of the Babylon mystery system, or even of The Law of Moses: **“¹⁶And not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.”**

People know they are not justified by the works of The Law. They are justified by the death of Christ. If so, why do they perform “the works” of The Law? It is not merely justification, but much more. Instead, if you do the works of The Law, you are under a curse.

Paul explained for those who preach that “gospel” (and doing works) – that they should be accursed. If you do “the works” of The Law, then you are under a curse. This concerns any works, aside from the ones that James said Gentile Christians should perform. If one believes that works

of God's Law are required to please God, then that person is under the curse. Why is this? It is because no one can keep The Whole Law.

If you keep any part of The Law, you must keep it all – or else you are under the curse (James 2:10). **“¹⁷But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid.”**

As a Christian (with the mind of God), you do not sin. The act of not sinning is a rare act of piety. Humans cannot stop sinning. Controlling your mouth and giving to the poor is true piety. Humans can give to the needy. Paul said: **“For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor.”** When Christ was crucified, you were forgiven for your sins.

SIN AFTER FORGIVENESS?

Do you want to begin sinning again after you have been forgiven? The answer should be “no.” You should not sin. So, this is not talking about the part of The Law that tells you what sin is. It is talking about that part of The Law that concerns physical works of piety. It is a monumental difference!

“¹⁸For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor.” If you go backward, and start sinning again, you will be guilty again. You are perverting The True Gospel by going backward. **“¹⁹for I through the law am dead to the law...”** Do not sin any more.

The basis is: “...that I might live unto God [striving to be like God]. ²⁰**I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I...**”

Now, if a Christian is dead to The Law, then it means you can't do any works. If it is you living in the flesh, and doing human works, then Christ is not living in you. If you do human works as an act of righteousness or piety, then Christ was not crucified for you. Paul said in Philippians 3, that this was like dung! However, he said: “**But Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh [as a human being] I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.**”

Now the whole answer is: “²¹**I do not frustrate the grace of God:**” These people were depending upon “the works” of The Law, such as building huge churches, beautiful edifices, creating pictures, statues, and rosaries. It would include monks going into caves. This concerns Christians following The Jewish religion – or Christians following Jewish Works of The Law.

ADMONITION OF PHARISEES

Remember Christ's admonition about The Pharisees and Sadducees. Most Christians have acted like Pharisees and The Sadducees, but do not know it. Jesus said: “**You are like white sepulchres.**” You look good on the outside, but within you are full of dead men's bones. On the outside, you look very religious. You go to church, and try to keep the days, and months Holy. You pray over the food, even in a restaurant, for the world to see your piety. Christ said, “**Your left hand is not to know what your right hand is doing.**”

Don't advertise your religious deeds by being so pious. When you fast, anoint yourself – and look as if you are not fasting. When you give to the poor, make sure no one knows about it. When you pray, do it in a closet. This is another distinction. This is the difference between man-made Christianity and those who want to follow Christ.

One method has human works with traditions, just as though one is acting in a “religious play.” The Pharisees and Sadducees had their oral law of tradition, and The Law of Moses had “works” also. The other method is to follow God who will lead you to Salvation into The Kingdom of God.

Then, “²¹**for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.**” Whether you keep pagan days, Jewish religious works, or if you keep “the works” of The Law – it is all in vain. To Christ, it doesn't mean anything – and the sadness of it all is that many so-called Christians don't understand The True Gospel.

Galatians 3:1-10 ¹**O foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you? ²This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? ³Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh? ⁴Have ye suffered so many things in vain? if it be yet in vain. ⁵He therefore that ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it by the works**

of the law, or by the hearing of faith? ⁶Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness. ⁷Know ye therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham. ⁸And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, In thee shall all nations be blessed. ⁹So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham. ¹⁰For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them. (Not the oral law of Jewish traditions.)

You must look at all the pieces of the puzzle to find The Real Gospel. Paul asked The Galatians: “¹...**who hath bewitched you**”? Who has confused and brainwashed you? Was it a promise that was given as A GIFT, or was there something you had to do to get it? “³**Are you so foolish?**” Only God's Spirit teaches you. You don't learn by doing “works.”

When you throw leavened bread out of your house during The Days of Unleavened Bread, can this make you perfect? Do you need to throw out leavened bread to remind you that you are a sinner – or has God's Spirit already revealed this to you? Do you think that, when you make a temporary dwelling at The Feast of Tabernacles, it can make you perfect – or lead you to Perfection?

PAGAN HOLIDAYS

When you keep Christmas or Easter, does it make you like Christ? **“O foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, ⁴Have ye suffered so many things in vain?”** Many were persecuted and crucified. Simply stated, God’s Spirit teaches you how to please God. **“⁶Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness.”** This is how Abraham kept The Law in God’s eyes. **“⁷Know ye therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham. ⁸And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham.”**

You must go back to what is called The Abrahamic Covenant when Abraham received The True Gospel: **“⁸before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, in thee shall all nations be blessed.”** This passage is literally a promise that all nations are going to be Saved. All nations are going to be blessed with this Gospel – Period.

THE ABRAHAMIC PROMISE

“⁹So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham. ¹⁰For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written,” That is the reason Paul said: **“Cursed be everyone who follows this perverse gospel.”**

Everyone who is **“of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things, which”**

are written in the book of the law to do them." It is better not to miss this important admonition. If it is a requirement to perform The Works of The Law in order to be a Christian, then you must do every "work" of The Law.

The list includes sacrifice, circumcision, leavening removal, wave sheaf offering, putting blood on doorposts, not touching unclean animals, etc. You must keep every part and parcel of The Law – or you are accursed (Galatians 3:10). So states God's Word! Do you believe God's Word?

In all this, men must be circumcised, because that was the first "work." You must put yourself in the company of Israel, by performing sacrifices, washings, observing The Holy Days, the new moons, The Sabbath – and all the other things they did.

Why would you put leavened bread out of the house – and not put blood on your doorpost? On the second day, during the week of Unleavened Bread, you should take the wave sheaf offering – and offer it to The Father. Why don't people take the first fruits and offer it at Pentecost?

Why don't people blow trumpets, or fast on The Day of Atonement? Why not go to a place of temporary dwelling during The Feast of Tabernacles? If you do one of these works, you're obligated to do all of them. This is "Scripturally" plain and direct!

Galatians 3 says: "**⁷Know ye therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.**" It is not by The Works of The Law.

A SUBJECT GREATER THAN CIRCUMCISION

This subject is far greater than the Circumcision. It has to do with all The Works of The Law. It covers every part of The Law. You cannot miss any one of The Works. If you tithe, you had better do The Whole Law. This is one of the many reasons why you shouldn't tithe to the ministry. If you tithe, you had better read Malachi 3. The reason you tithe is so you will be physically blessed – so your storehouses can be full.

But, those who follow Christ are under a completely different blessing. It is a totally alternative system of financing the work based on need.

“⁸And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, In thee shall all nations be blessed. ⁹So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham. ¹⁰For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them. But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith.”

You may say you know you are not justified by The Law, but Scripture says that if you don't do every part of The Law, you are cursed. Why? It is because you are rejecting Christ's sacrifice. You are rejecting what The Whole Law shadows – Christ (Hebrews 10:1-2, John 5:46).

The Works of The Law point to Christ. This is the reason you don't sacrifice animals. You don't put leavened bread out of your house because you, yourself are unleavened. You don't offer the wave-sheaf offering during Unleavened Bread because Christ was already accepted by The Father. You don't give the firstfruits of the harvest at Pentecost because The Church had already received God's Spirit.

If you study The Scriptures, and put each piece together, you can assemble the puzzle – and work towards “Perfection,” instead of attempting to do “Works” that only make you seem pious and ultimately receive a curse.

Galatians 3:11-16 ¹¹But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith. ¹²And the law is not of faith: but, The man that doeth them shall live in them. ¹³Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree: ¹⁴That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ, that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith. ¹⁵Brethren, I speak after the manner of man; Though it be but a man's Covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth, or addeth thereto. ¹⁶Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.

CURSE OF THE LAW

If Christ has “Redeemed” you from the curse, you are not required to do any of The Works: **“Being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree: ¹⁴That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles.”** Salvation will come to the rest of the world: **“...through Jesus Christ, that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.”**

A man’s agreement is a contract between human beings. It is signed by both individuals, and **“...no man disannulleth, or addeth thereto.”** Human physical contracts are binding: **“¹⁶Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made.”** This is a Covenant and a contract. There is a part of The Abrahamic Covenant that is a contract, and part of it has a specific promise with no conditions except Faith: **“Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made.”**

The blessings for all nations is a promise: **“He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one...”** So Abraham had The Gospel of Jesus Christ preached to him: **“And to your seed, which is Christ.”**

Summarizing now, there are two types of Gospels – (1) The Circumcision based on Works, and (2) The Uncircumcision, which is not based on Works. The only human works you do as a Christian, are in keeping your mouth shut, not sinning, helping others, and giving to the poor. That is your piety. That is your “life’s work.” That is it, in a nutshell.

Genesis 12:1-3 ¹Now the Lord had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee: ²And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: ³And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed.

In The Abrahamic Covenant, Abraham was given, (1) Physical Promises and (2) Spiritual Promises. This account tells Abraham to leave his country and go into a new country.

The very first book, Genesis, begins to tell you about The Gospel. In Galatians, Paul said this was The Gospel. **“¹Now the Lord had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will shew thee: ²And I will make of thee a great nation.”** This is a Physical Promise, not a Spiritual Promise. **“³And I will bless thee,”** Then Abraham prospered.

GENESIS 49

In Genesis 49, you are told that through Abraham's seed, all of his children would prosper and would be blessed. This is an amazing Promise. When you see wealthy nations prospering today, it is because many are the children of Abraham. **“³And I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing.”**

Although this is directly out of Galatians 3:8, these are all Physical Blessings: “**And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed.**”

This is, also, a Spiritual Blessing. In Galatians, Paul is talking about Christ, not about Circumcision. Now, you will see in greater degree about the time when Circumcision began to be important.

Genesis 17:1-8 ¹And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, the Lord appeared to Abram, and said unto him, I am the Almighty God; walk before me, and be thou perfect. ²And I will make my Covenant between me and thee, and will multiply thee exceedingly. ³And Abram fell on his face: and God talked with him, saying, ⁴As for me, behold, my Covenant is with thee, and thou shalt be a father of many nations. ⁵Neither shall thy name any more be called Abram, but thy name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made thee. ⁶And I will make thee exceeding fruitful, and I will make nations of thee, and kings shall come out of thee. ⁷And I will establish my Covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting Covenant, to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee. ⁸And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God.

Abraham was 75 years old when he left the Babylonian area, and was 99 years of age at the time of this account. Perfection was the requirement for Abraham, and PERFECTION is the requirement for True Christians who understand The Truth.

In Matthew 5:48, Jesus Christ said: **“Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.”** Abraham was promised that through his seed, he would be made into many nations.

Previously, his other Promise would be Blessings. Now God's Covenant says: **“²And I will make my covenant between me and thee, and will multiply thee exceedingly. ³And Abram fell on his face: and God talked with him, saying, ⁴As for me, behold, my covenant is with thee, and thou shalt be a father of many nations.”** This means literally, physical nations throughout the ages.

IN THE BEGINNING

In the beginning, The Gospel was preached to Adam and Eve, but they “blew it.” Adam, who was the first type of Christ, could have been the Father of all nations. All nations were to be blessed – and Eve was to be the mother of all nations. Instead, she was replaced by Sarah.

These were “The Physical Promises” made. **“⁷And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting Covenant, to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee.”** This refers to the physical Kingdom of God: **“⁸And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land.”** Abraham

was promised The Land of Canaan in this Covenant: **“Wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God.”**

The Role of Circumcision now comes into play.

Genesis 17:9-12 ⁹And God said unto Abraham, Thou shalt keep my Covenant therefore, thou, and thy seed after thee in their generations. ¹⁰This is my covenant, which ye shall keep, between me and you and thy seed after thee; Every man child among you shall be circumcised. ¹¹And ye shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin; and it shall be a token of the covenant betwixt me and you. ¹²And he that is eight days old shall be circumcised among you, every man child in your generations, he that is born in the house, or bought with money of any stranger, which is not of thy seed.

In Genesis 12, no Circumcision is mentioned because a Spiritual Blessing was being given to Abraham and to future nations. All he had to do was have The Faith to leave his country: **“⁹And God said unto Abraham, Thou shalt keep my covenant therefore.”**

What is that Covenant? It is this: **“¹⁰This is my covenant, which ye shall keep...”** This is the reason Jews wanted them to be Circumcised. It concerns: **“Between me and you and thy seed after thee; every man child among you shall be circumcised.”**

This is The Covenant of Circumcision, or The Gospel of Circumcision. Israel thought The Abrahamic Covenant came by The Law. It was a physical government. It had to do with the land, which is the land of Canaan. It was concerned with nations, kings, and kingdoms: **“¹¹And ye shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin; and it shall be a token.”**

This is the signature of The Covenant between God and Abraham. Paul said that a human contract, if it is signed and confirmed, could not be broken. **“And he that is eight days old.”**

COVENANT WHEN CHRIST RETURNS

This same Covenant will be enforced when Christ returns and Israel will enter the land, which Christ will restore during The Millennium (study Ezekiel 36 to 48). The Eighth Day shadows The Day of Judgment when ALL will be Saved. That is why they Circumcised on The Eighth Day, as it was The Day of Release. This is God's Jubilee.

“¹²And he that is eight days old shall be circumcised among you, every man child in your generations, he that is born in the house or bought with money of any stranger which is not of thy seed.” This is The Covenant of Circumcision. This is why The Jewish Christians were telling The Gentile Christians they had to be Circumcised.

As a sign, Circumcision gave Israel “The Promise.” They understood how The Promises came through The Circumcision in The Abrahamic Covenant. The Promise through Abraham was very logical and understandable because they all understood The Promises of Christ.

Through this Covenant came The Promises, Blessings, and Prosperity of The Physical Kingdom of God.

As time went on, you will find that King David and King Solomon became rulers over the leading nations in the world. Future kings governed over many nations, and in Solomon's time, they were prosperous beyond belief. Those "Promises" were a blessing – not only to Israel – but to everyone. However, they refused to enter into God's rest.

When did that rest begin? It started at The Seventh Day with Adam and Eve. Just as Adam and Eve wanted to decide for themselves, the people chose for themselves what was "right" in their own eyes – and they did not follow The Will of God.

Adam and Eve could have taken fruit from The Tree of Life. When they did not take of The Tree of Life, they could not enter God's rest. Neither did David or Solomon enter into God's rest. David was indeed faithful, and will be in The Kingdom of God. However, The Tribes of Israel (as a nation) will not. They will be Saved later (Romans 11).

THE CHRISTIAN PROMISE

Genesis 22:1-2 ¹And it came to pass after these things, that God did tempt Abraham, and said, unto him, Abraham: and he said, Behold, here I am. ²And he said, Take now thy son, thine only son Isaac, whom thou lovest, and get thee into the land of Moriah; and offer

him there for a burnt offering upon one of the mountains which I will tell thee of.

Examine The Promise. It is based on the great test of Abraham: “¹**And it came to pass after these things, that God did tempt Abraham...**” This was Abraham’s maximum test. This is “the only work” Abraham had to perform – which was obedience to God. Remember, that Abraham already had received The Gospel preached to him. Now something is to be “Added” to this Gospel: “²**And he said, Take now thy son, thine only son Isaac, whom thou lovest, and get thee into the land of Moriah; and offer him there for a burnt offering upon one of the mountains which I will tell thee of.**”

SACRIFICE OF ISAAC

Abraham took his son Isaac to a special mountain. Isaac could have been between 21 to 33 years of age – just as Christ was at His death. No one knows exactly. Abraham’s son asked: “**Father, where is the offering?**” Abraham said: “**You are the offering.**” And Abraham’s son said: “**Yes, father.**” So he laid himself down to be killed. Christ also said: “**Yes, Father, not my will be done, but thy will be done.**” Abraham had to have “The Faith” to believe.

He believed that if he killed Isaac, then Isaac would be immediately resurrected. He believed God enough to know that he could give his only son (as God would give His only Son) – and then the son would be resurrected. Abraham understood absolutely, and believed fully. He had total Faith that Isaac would be resurrected.

Genesis 22:15-18 ¹⁵And the angel of the Lord called unto Abraham out of heaven the second time, ¹⁶And said, By myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son: ¹⁷That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies; ¹⁸And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice.

Notice that: **“¹⁵...the angel of the Lord called unto Abraham out of heaven the second time.”** The first time was a physical Covenant with physical promises of prosperity. God is affirming all this. Remember how The Law requires two witnesses. The two witnesses here are: (1) God, and (2) the fact that God cannot lie. Combined, these are The Two Witnesses: **“By myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, for because thou has done this thing...”** The Covenant is past history. Abraham and The Covenant of Circumcision are also past.

The Covenant with Abraham was based upon physical promises, which are: the land of Canaan, kingship, nations, and prosperity. Then God said: **“¹⁷That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore:...”** This is the whole world. **“¹⁸...and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies;...”** Israel will be the gatekeeper into New

Jerusalem. **“And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice.”**

ABRAHAMIC COVENANT

The Abrahamic Covenant had two parts: (1) A Physical Part that required Circumcision or Physical Works, and (2) A Spiritual Part that required absolutely NO WORKS. This is a great difference. Even The Apostles were confused until Paul explained this to them. This was thanks to his personal teaching from Christ, Himself.

**Mark 1:1 The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ,
the Son of God;**

Why are The First Four Books of The New Testament called The Gospels? One clue is contained in the words: **“¹The beginning of the gospel.”** The word “Gospel” in the Greek is “Euaggelion.” “Euaggelion” means “good news,” or “angelic message from God.” Evangelist comes from the word “angel.” Evangelism is the good news or angelic message from God. Remember that God’s angels are “the messengers” of God to all mankind. This is the beginning of the good news, or the angelic message from God about Jesus Christ. The other three Gospels are all different, but they are all Gospels, nonetheless.

Matthew deals in the beginning with the genealogy of Christ. This shows Christ’s Inheritance of The Gospel. Through The Promise of The Inheritance (Abraham’s seed), Christ had a right to that good news.

LUKE'S ACCOUNT

Luke's account gives you the instructions of how Christians are supposed to live. John's Gospel is different. In John 1:1, "**In the beginning was the word.**" Mark's Gospel starts with the beginning of the good news of Christ. John's Gospel proves The Kingdom Message is from The Word of God – or God's Word.

I Peter 5:13 The church that is at Babylon, elected together with you, saluteth you; and so doth Marcus my son.

Peter was related to Mark and regarded him as a son. Peter used Mark at times as a scribe. Here is his account.

Mark 1:14-15 ¹⁴Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God. ¹⁵And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel.

John 6:29 Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.

The Gospel is The Angelic Good News about Christ. It is for you to believe what He said as the very Word of God, Christ Himself! His

ministry started in Mark 1: **“¹⁴Now after that John was put in prison...”**
John, The Baptist's work was completed.

John, The Baptist was **“the best man”** in the marriage between Christ and His Bride. John prepared the way for The Bridegroom. **“Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God. And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand:”**

The Covenant of Abraham was about The Gospel. To inherit certain rights in that Gospel, you had to be Circumcised. Now, a different Gospel is presented: **“¹⁵God is at hand: repent ye...”** He is not asking you to be “Circumcised,” but rather: **“...repent ye, and believe the gospel.”**

Two things are required: (1) HAVE A CHANGE OF MIND IN FOLLOWING GOD'S WILL and (2) HAVE FAITH THAT GOD WILL DO IT. That is what Abraham had to do. When Abraham showed his Faith by offering his son, Isaac, then he received The Promise of Eternal Life.

The Acts 1:4-6 ⁴And, being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which saith he, ye have heard of me. ⁵For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence. ⁶When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?

APOSTLES ASSEMBLED

In Acts 1, The Apostle Peter and the other Apostles are with Jesus Christ. Christ was teaching them during the forty days and forty nights prior to his ascension. **“⁴And, being assembled together with them, he [Christ] commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which saith he, ye have heard of me. ⁵For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence. ⁶When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?”**

The Apostles didn't know The True Gospel at that time. All they knew was The Gospel of Circumcision (about the physical kingdom). They knew The Abrahamic Covenant had promised The Land of Canaan, The Kings, and The Prosperity. But that was all they knew.

This condition continued until Paul had received his instructions – as revealed by Christ in Galatians 3:16. Prior to that, no one knew The True Gospel. Paul said: **“He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.”**

Paul understood The Spiritual Promise about Jesus Christ and The Gospel of The Kingdom of God when Isaac was offered. Clearly, there is a great difference between these parts of The Gospel. The works of The Law are meaningless and are useless today.

Galatians 4:10-11 ¹⁰**Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years. ¹¹I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain.**

In Galatians, Paul explains very plainly: **“¹⁰Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years.”** Is he talking about pagan days? No, he is not. They had already left those days. But then they returned to the beggarly elements of days and years again. These are just different days. Paul said: **“¹¹I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain.”**

Specifically, this tells you all about the sacrifice of Isaac. It tells you about the life of Hagar and Ishmael. It tells you about the difference between The Physical Part of the Abrahamic Covenant – and The Spiritual Part of The Abrahamic Covenant.

Galatians 4:19-25 ¹⁹**My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you, ²⁰I desire to be present with you now, and to change my**

voice; for I stand in doubt of you. ²¹Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law?

²²For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman. ²³But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh; but he of the freewoman was by promise. ²⁴Which things are an allegory: for these are the two Covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to

bondage, which is Agar. ²⁵For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children.

Paul addresses these people as: **“¹⁹My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you.”** He was angry, and said: **“For I stand in doubt of you.”** They were tithing, taking leavening out of their houses, and running off to build temporary dwellings.

Paul said: **“²¹Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law?”** He wants mankind to know what The Law is: Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy. These are The Five Books.

Then in Hebrews 10:1: **“For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices, which they offered year by year continually make the covers thereunto perfect.”**

TWO SONS OF ABRAHAM

In Galatians 4:22, Paul tells: **“²²For it is written, that Abraham had two sons...”** This text brings you back to The Abrahamic Covenant. Regarding the two sons, he said: **“The one by a bondwoman [slave], the other by a freewoman.”** This was by Promise.

However, there are problems: **“²³But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh [by human effort]; but he of the freewoman was by promise.”** This was a miracle and a gift. The promise to Isaac

was that he was born free. Then, the clarification: “²⁴...**Which things are an allegory:...**” This was a type. Hagar through Ishmael is one type, and Sarah through Isaac is another type.

Remember, (humanly) Abraham was like God, The Father, and Isaac was like The Son, Jesus Christ. Hagar also signifies one thing, and Ishmael signifies another. The Scriptures tell you what each means – such as: **“For these are the two covenants...”**

In Israel, this included The Law of Moses, because they were unconverted: “...**the one from the Mount Sinai [The Law of Moses], **Which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar [Hagar]** ²⁵**For this Agar is Mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children.”****

He is talking about Jerusalem in his day. There was a Temple, The Holy Place, wherein dwelt “The Shekinah” – or The Glory of God. To have God stay with them, to be their God, and to have The Promises according to Abraham, they were required to do all “the works” of The Law. The Temple was the center for performing “the works” of The Law!

It seems ludicrous to be required to throw leavened bread out and bring in barley harvests forever – in order to become a Son of God. It even sounds funny when you say it that way. In Galatians 4, Paul says: “²⁵**For this Agar is Mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children.”**

They are in slavery. The Law intended “those works” to be SLAVERY. Those works were only to bring them to Christ. They were in slavery to do all The Law! This was until the time appointed.

BONDAGE OF WORKS

The bondage of The Works of The Law reminds the people of sin. That was The Jewish Religion of The Law of Moses. That was The Jewish form of piety based on The Physical Promises of The Abrahamic Covenant – by which the men had to be Circumcised. You could not miss any of “the works,” because if you missed one, you would be under the curse, which meant Christ’s sacrifice was for nothing.

Can you now understand why Paul was so angry? It should make all of you angry to have been fooled by your so-called Christian leaders! Paul said: “**...Be ye angry, and sin not...**” (Ephesians 4:26). Now, Galatians 4:26 tells you what The Gospel is, and what The Kingdom is: “**²⁶But Jerusalem which is above is free.**” Freedom means that no one has the authority to tell you what to do, physically, to receive The Promise.

That is why God had to write His laws in your hearts and minds or change your nature, so there is no need for anyone to tell you what Works of The Law you need to do (Romans 2:12-29). Through God’s Spirit, you do not deliberately sin. If you slip, you will repent – and sin no more. In I Timothy 1:9 it says: “**The law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient.**”

You only need The Law when you are unrighteous or a sinner, so you must have a schoolmaster – The Law, to bring you to Christ! **“²⁶But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.”** Indeed, the pieces of the puzzle are now showing a more complete picture of The Plan of God.

SIN ADDED THE LAW

Galatians 3:17-22 ¹⁷And this I say, that the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect. ¹⁸For if the inheritance be of the law it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise. ¹⁹Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. ²⁰Now a mediator is not a mediator of one, but God is one. ²¹Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law. ²²But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.

Galatians 3:17 tells you The Purpose of The Law. The Law is Holy, it is

just, and it is good. No one should be against it. Christ said in Matthew 5:17-19 that: **“...not one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.”** That is until God’s Plan is completed.

Galatians 3:17 reports that: **“¹⁷And this I say, that the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of no effect.”** Keeping The Works of The Law doesn’t change anything in The Promise. IT IS A COMPLETE GIFT.

“¹⁹Wherefore then serveth the law?” He is not talking about sin, but he is talking about The Works of The Law. **“It was added, because of transgressions...”** This was until (“till”) a point in time when The Letter of The Law CEASES.

WHY LAW WAS GIVEN

So, The Law was given to allow you, when you were a sinner or a transgressor, to be able to come to Christ. The Law allowed you to understand you were a sinner, and that when Christ came, He bought you with His payment of death. The Works of The Law were no longer required. Christ came, died, and was resurrected. New Christians, who understand this, can skip The Works of The Law COMPLETELY.

Romans 4:20 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God;

Romans tells you that The Law was made because it was obvious that all are sinners (Romans 5:20). To inherit The Kingdom of God, Christ said you must REPENT and BELIEVE The Gospel. Jesus Christ plainly tells you what The Kingdom of God is.

Matthew 18:1-4 ¹At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven? ²And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them. ³And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. ⁴Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

When The Bible is divided into chapters and verses, a great deal of the complete meaning is missed. When there is no flowing context, the message does not progress in the proper, continuous manner.

KINGDOM OF GOD

The subject is The Kingdom of God. Notice, it is called The Kingdom of Heaven. Where is New Jerusalem? Is it in Heaven? Christians use this Scripture to say you will go to heaven. No! It says "Kingdom of Heaven." It doesn't say Kingdom in Heaven. It is The Kingdom of Heaven, so you should pray: "**Thy Kingdom come Thy will be done on earth as it is in Heaven.**" This will be done on earth.

This is another piece of the puzzle: **“²And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them. ³And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the Kingdom of Heaven. ⁴Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven.”**

To enter God’s Kingdom, you must be humble and innocent as a little child. You must be open and teachable, seeking God’s will. Repentance is a change of mind. God’s Word tells you how to change. Don’t let the ideas of men convince you what you should do. Regarding little children as an example of the converted:

Matthew 18:10-14 ¹⁰Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven. ¹¹For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost. ¹²How think ye? If a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray? ¹³And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that sheep, than of the ninety and nine which went not astray. ¹⁴Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

SAVE THE WHOLE WORLD

God's Will is to Save The Whole World. When you honestly and sincerely repent, you are Saved. You will not be lost. Compare what was lost and what must be restored. This word "Saved" in the Greek means "restore." What must be restored, is that which, WAS LOST. This is something that had existed – and then, lost.

Genesis 3:22-24 ²²And the Lord God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: ²³Therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. ²⁴So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.

After Adam and Eve sinned in The Garden of Eden, God said: "**Behold, the man is become as one of us.**" God was not talking to Himself. He was talking to everybody in heaven who was like you, like The Sons of God, the 24 elders, and the angels. They all look like you.

God said: "**The man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever:**"

The Tree of Life was lost. Christ had to come to restore the opportunity to receive Eternal Life. **“²³Therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. ²⁴So he drove out the man: and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.”**

Generations of Christians knew about the Cherubim that were placed in The Garden to guard The Tree of Life. ETERNAL LIFE was lost, so Christ had to come to restore ETERNAL LIFE.

What is The Kingdom of God? It is “THE GOOD NEWS!” It is The Angelic Good News of The Message of God. God’s Son, Jesus Christ, came to restore Eternal Life in The Kingdom of God.

Luke 17:20-21 ²⁰And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: ²¹Neither shall they say, Lo here! Or lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.

Luke 17 explains how different The Kingdom of God is from what Peter and The Apostles thought – or for that matter what The Jews thought: **“²⁰And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, “**

They all acted as if they were looking for a physical kingdom – just as The Apostles were looking to restore The Kingdom to Israel. But: **“He answered them and said, The Kingdom of God cometh not with observation:”** This is not physical. God's Kingdom is The Good News that Christ brought to Save you so that you can have Eternal Life. This is not a physical kingdom. **“²¹Neither shall they say, Lo here! Or, lo there! For, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.”** It is a SPIRITUAL KINGDOM within you requiring only Spiritual Works. This is **“Christ in you”** (Colossians 1:27).

John 3:1-6 ¹There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: ²The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him. ³Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. ⁴Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? ⁵Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. ⁶That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

KINGDOM WITHIN YOU?

Theologically, there has been much argument over what Christ meant when He said: “**the Kingdom of God is within you**” (Luke 17:21). All that theologians needed to do was to believe what Christ said, and they would have understood. The message is that each person needs to be reborn into another being, BUT NOT JUST YET. If a person is not “reborn,” then they cannot enter that Kingdom.

If The Apostles asked you: “**Are you going to restore the kingdom of Israel at this time,**” what would you tell them? That is not what The Kingdom is. “**⁶That which is born of the flesh, is flesh....**” As long as you are human – then you are in the flesh. Otherwise: “**...that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.**”

The good news about Christ is that you have A Promise that it is God’s Will to eventually, Save The Whole World. It is for all mankind to inherit Eternal Life – and become Spirit Beings. That is The True Gospel. You are to be Spiritual Sons of God, just like Him, in His family!

Revelation 21:1-2 ¹And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. ²And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

The Kingdom fulfills The Sabbath Rest. This is what The Sabbath is all about. They never entered into God's Rest. The Israelites came close in the physical sense during Solomon's day, but their problem was that they didn't believe. **"¹And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. ²And I, John saw The holy city..."**

The Apostle Paul said in Galatians, that Christians are from Jerusalem, which is in Heaven. It is not Jerusalem with The Physical Laws of The Temple of that time. But it was: **"Coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband."**

So what is New Jerusalem? Christ said in John 14:2, **"I go to prepare a place for you."** His Bride, The Church, is dressed with jewels and coming down. Many wealthy men satiate themselves and their families with all the luxuries money can buy.

After getting more luxuries than they can possibly use, they begin to do good things for others. They build hospitals, orphanages, libraries, museums, resorts, hotels, and create parks. They create many nonprofit organizations. They create foundations and endowments. They endow their mansions and gardens to the public.

RICHEST BEING IN THE UNIVERSE

God is the richest being in the universe. God owns everything. In I Corinthians 15, you may ask: "What is God's Purpose?" It is to reproduce Himself. You become God's Sons! God can't give more than all He has.

He is reproducing Himself through The Sons of God, and The Bride (The Church), which is New Jerusalem.

What is The Kingdom of God? It is New Jerusalem descending down out of Heaven, who is The Mother of us ALL. It is the dwelling place of The Bride (The Church), with Christ, The Groom. This is The Promise you have through Abraham – and is The True Gospel of The Kingdom.

The True Gospel is about a Spiritual Kingdom where you will be SPIRITUAL Sons of God. When God reproduces Himself, God will be all and in all (I Corinthians 15:28). God's Kingdom is God reproducing Himself into a Family of Nations. THAT MEANS SALVATION FOR EACH AND EVERY ONE OF YOU. IT IS GOD'S WILL. GOD'S WILL WILL BE DONE.

CHAPTER 8

MARRIAGE – THE GREAT MYSTERY

About 6,000 years ago, Adam and Eve had been given the opportunity to obtain Eternal Life. This Gift would have included all subsequent generations of human beings. Instead, they failed in this mission – hence all of them who were born to live and then have all died or will die, are all lost.

Christ had to appear on earth about 2,000 years ago to give His life: “¹¹**to save that which was lost**” (Matthew 18:11). God does not intend to lose any of His sheep (Matthew 18:14). When Christ mentions the 100 sheep, and looks for that one which is lost, He does not rest until He finds that one.

This is a very important concept to understand. The greatest hope concerns the most fantastic Promise that is being given you. God will not rest until all are Saved! Eventually, all will enter God’s Spiritual Kingdom.

The True Gospel is The Plan for all creation to be Saved – not as physical beings – but as Spiritual Beings in a Spiritual Kingdom. God’s Library records everyone who will be in New Jerusalem. They are written in The Book of the Life of The Lamb. Everyone who will enter God’s Kingdom when New Jerusalem appears – is written in The Lamb’s Book of Life.

WHY WRITTEN?

Why was The Book of Life written at all? It is because everyone who is written in The Book of Life must become worthy. Everyone must repent, just as Christ, The Son of God, had to qualify. Then, those who do not believe (who are lost) will be thrown into The Lake of Fire.

Matthew 18:11 declares that The Purpose for Christ’s coming “**is to save.**” This means to restore everything the way it was in The Garden of Eden. In this Chapter, you will find the most important piece of the puzzle. It is one of the major events in the process of restoring everyone – and everything. This is the whole reason The Christ came to this earth.

Matthew 19:3-8 ³The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? ⁴And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female, ⁵And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh? ⁶Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath

joined together, let not man put asunder. ⁷They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away? ⁸He saith unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so.

As you study The Bible, it is best to read it from the standpoint of "Restoration." **³The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him [they were testing Him all the time], and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?"**

This is the same as asking if it is permissible to obtain a divorce? The response was: **⁴And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning..."**

Now, come back to the beginning of Genesis. What was present at that time between the man and the woman? The Bible says that God made them male and female. Notice there was no marriage ceremony between Adam and Eve.

Why were they not married? It is because Eve came directly out of Adam. Do you mean to say they were living Common Law? Of course not! Genesis says He: **"made them male and female."** As male and female, where did they come from? They came from God.

God commented on this. He: **⁵...said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall**

be one flesh?” Literally, they were one flesh – but now they were two separate entities.

HELPMATE REQUIRED

When Adam was created, he needed a helpmate. In Genesis 2, God caused Adam to fall asleep, and then removed from Adam’s side, a part of him. The English word is “rib.” The Hebrew means “side.” God took bone out of Adam’s side, and she became Eve. Yet, she was Adam.

They were not two. They were truly one. Hence, they did not need to be married. They were already one. **“Wherefore they are no more twain [they aren’t two], but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder”** (Matthew 19:6).

The reason Eve was brought forth out of Adam was to prove they were one flesh. That is why she carried Adam’s name. Being one flesh, how could they have been put asunder? How could there have been a divorce? How could Adam have put her away?

This essentially means that it would have been necessary to cut them in half. In Matthew 19:7: **“They [Pharisees] say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away?”**

The question posed was why a man (under The Law) could divorce his wife. **“He [Jesus] saith unto them, Moses because of the hardness [unrepentant] of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but**

from the beginning it was not so. Christ was required to come here to restore marriage. He not only came to Save human life, but you will find how it is through marriage that human life is Saved!

MARRIAGE IS CENTRAL

You will find that everything written in The Bible is about marriage. That is a correct statement. In fact, the largest and the most important part of the puzzle is to understand that everything from Genesis to Revelation is all about marriage. In the beginning, Adam and Eve were one flesh – literally. She was: “**bone of his bone.**” It is for this same reason that each of you must become ONE with The Son and The Father.

The reason Moses permitted divorce was because the ancient Israelites did not have love. When someone has hardness in their heart, they lack love – or God's “agapè.” Humans can only love by passion or compatibility. Since God, through Moses, His Prophet, knew they didn't have love, He permitted men to divorce (put away) their wives. They did not regard marriage as one flesh. Their wives were not perceived as: “bone of their bone” and “flesh of their flesh.” How did this come about, and what was the reason?

**Matthew 19:9-10, “⁹And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, commiteth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery.
¹⁰His disciples say unto him, If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.”**

Christ's Disciples did not understand how to be of the same flesh with a wife. They did not know God's love – or agapè. How could a husband and wife come from the same flesh?

Many books have been written about what keeps married people together. One book declares that you must be compatible. Other books tout that man and woman stay together because of passion or emotion (“eros”) for each other.

WHY ACCEPT EACH OTHER?

A further reason why a person accepts another is in the form of “philia.” You seem to be compatible. You like to do the same things. You enjoy the same things – and accept each other as you both are. So, it seems that the whole world marries on the basis of two points: (1) passion and/or (2) compatibility. But, that is not what it takes to make a marriage for life. It takes God's love, “agapè.” By agapè, you become one with your mate.

Ephesians 5:25-32 ²⁵Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the Church, and gave himself for it; ²⁶That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word. ²⁷That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. ²⁸So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself. ²⁹For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the

church: ³⁰For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones. ³¹For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. ³²This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.

“²⁵Husbands, love your wives.” The word for love is “agapè.” In the Greek, it means “giving to the other” – or in The King James translation, it is “charity!” Soon, you will see what was lost in marriage in The Garden of Eden. Husbands, “agapè” your wives.

Then Paul explains what “agapè” is, by stating: **“even as Christ, also loved [agape] the church, and gave himself for it...”** This is self-sacrificing one’s own life for the other: **“²⁶That he might sanctify [making it special] and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, ²⁷That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle.”**

SIGNIFICANT FAIRY TALES

Many fairy tales tell the story of marriage. The example of Cinderella (prepared and waiting for the prince) favorably compares with the account about Jesus Christ and His Bride. Snow White (poisoned by the female Satan), and The Seven Dwarfs (seven churches) are, also, about Jesus Christ and The Bride.

The Wizard of Oz movie with its song, “Over the Rainbow,” is a story about Jesus Christ and The Bride (Dorothy) who was lost while trying to

find the road home to Christ. On this basis, it can be said: **“²⁷that he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish [no flaws]. ²⁸So ought men to love their wives as their own [what?] bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself.”** Why is this? If she is of his bone, flesh, and blood, then they will love each other: **“²⁹For no man ever yet hated his own flesh;...”**

How different was the first Godly marriage from all other marriages after that? With Eve virtually coming out of Adam, they were one flesh, and bone of bone. They would need to become divided (severed) in order to be divorced. It is obvious that they would, then, both die.

MARRIAGE AND THE PASSOVER

Now, what happens at The Passover? Christ said that unless you eat “My Body” and drink “My Blood,” then you have no part with Me. He was talking about a marriage. It was about one flesh: **“³⁰...For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones. ³¹For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. ³²This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.”** This story reveals The Purpose of the entire Word of God. It is all about marriage

When Christ was restoring (saving) that which was lost, He was trying to save the original marriage state. This is Salvation – which is becoming one flesh. If Adam was the type of Christ (Romans 5:14), then Paul says

the marriage of The Church is The Body of Christ. It is a great mystery. The Bridegroom and The Church are married to each other.

If Adam and Eve kept God's way of marriage instead of following Satan, they would have remained in The Garden of Eden with God. Eve's children could have been there. Adam could have been the appointed Christ-figure! When Christ came to Save (restore) the world, and give Eternal Life, He did it through restoring marriage.

Most follow Satan's system of marriage which is based upon women being a sex object – and man dominating the woman (Genesis 3:1-16). When Adam and Eve ate the forbidden fruit, both became aware they were naked (Genesis 3:10-11). In Satan's marriage system, women become the husband's property.

Deuteronomy 24:1 **When a man hath taken a wife, and married her, and it come to pass that she find no favour in his eyes, because he hath found some uncleanness in her: then let him write her a bill of divorcement, and give it in her hand, and send her out of his house.**

Moses permitted divorce because of the hardness of their hearts. Paul said the husband should “agapè” his wife – or love her as he loves his own body. Husbands did not have “agapè” for their wives, so they were allowed to divorce: **“¹When a man hath taken a wife, and married her.”**

MARRIAGE AND BAAL

The word “marry” in the Hebrew is “Baal.” “Baal” was the leading “god of fertility” for The Canaanites. Baalism is all about sex. Therefore: **“¹When a man hath taken a wife, and...** “Baal” her... that is, “married” her... and “Baal” was master (lord) over fertility, then she became his property. So, when Israel played the whore – and went after “Baal” – then God says she was married to another.

Israel literally changed from being (as) one flesh with God – and rather became the property of “Baal.” Check that word “marry” in Deuteronomy 24:1 to be sure it is “Baal.” And understand the word “marry” throughout The Law is “Baal.” How did it change from the time in the beginning when Adam and Eve were one flesh – and Adam loved that flesh because it was his own flesh? Adam listened to his wife because she was his own flesh.

It may be difficult for the reader to understand why God placed women in the position of slavery. When a person is under “Baal,” they become a slave to Baal.” True Christians are “doulos” or “slaves” of their husband, Christ. According to The Law, slaves to Jesus (The Bridegroom) are just as much a slave to “Baal.” The time of release comes later.

How did all this proceed from true marriage (based upon “agapè” and bone of bone and flesh of flesh) to property? After all, slaves and women were bought and sold. How did this happen?

Genesis 3:11-16 ¹¹And he said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat? ¹²And the man said, The woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat. ¹³And the Lord God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat. ¹⁴And the Lord God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: ¹⁵And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel. ¹⁶Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee.

How did marriage change? The original marriage wasn't based on the man being the head or lord, but on the man being the head by means of loving his flesh (wife). This is a totally different situation that cannot be "put asunder." When a wife is your property, then you can divorce her, sell her, and get rid of her – except by means of murder. The text says: **“¹¹Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat?”**

FINDING FAULT

The man always says that it was his wife's fault. The charge is that: "My wife did it or it was her idea." ¹²**And the man said, The woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat."**

This is after Adam and Eve ate from The Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. Adam did it because he loved his wife. Those who love their wives have a difficult time saying "no" to them. Speaking as a man, I can say that it is quite tough, isn't it?

Well, it was pretty difficult for Adam too. But still this was no excuse. He should have thought of his wife and said: "We had better not take that fruit." Instead: ¹³**And the Lord God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat."** The chain reaction begins. First Adam blames Eve, and now Eve blames the serpent.

BLAME THE SERPENT

It is never the fault of the perpetrator – because of human nature, which always seeks to find someone else to blame. This is a process of never accepting the blame – and always passing the buck: ¹⁴**And the Lord God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle,"**

In God's eyes, Satan was placed beneath all the other animals. He was the most carnal, beastlike, and poisonous: **"...and above every beast of the**

field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: ¹⁵**And I will put enmity between thee and the woman [hostility] and between thy seed [Satan, also, has children] and her seed [her children]; it shall bruise thy head [speaking about Christ] and thou shalt bruise his heel.** ¹⁶**Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception;...**" Bearing children occurs in pain.

Eve went through this pain, and will again in the future when she sees her children thrown into The Lake of Fire. This would be a painful sight: **"...in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee."** There is the indictment.

THE CHANGE IN MARRIAGE

Marriage changed, substantially, at this point. This was not the way things were supposed to be in the beginning. No longer was Adam head as the husband. He was, now, the master. He was like "Baal." Since then, men could go out and buy women as possessions. They were like a product. That is when all this started.

Why must women be handled like chattel? This was the penalty for following Satan. God gave them over to Satan's system of marriage. So Christ came to Save that which was lost. He had to Save His marriage (becoming one with Christ). Christ must restore marriage – to the way it was in the beginning. The reader will need an even greater understanding of this when reading Matthew 19: **"¹⁰If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry."** This is amazing!

There is a complete difference between God's marriage and man's marriage (Satan's system). That is why man's marriage is based on "eros" and "philia," and God's marriage is based on "agapè." Paul said: "**God's marriage is a great mystery.**" Christ must restore marriage where both mates love each other as one flesh – or "agapè."

Was there a better way for God to save His creation than having to require His own Son to die? His Son had to die to prove He was worthy ("agapè") of His wife. This meant that Christ had to buy back or REDEEM His wife. Why did you have to have a Savior – and why didn't Adam qualify? It was all because of free choice.

TWO CHOICES

In the beginning, God gave Adam and Eve two choices. He said: "Look, Adam, you can be Savior, and you can be The Christ." He went on to say: "Eve, you can be the mother of all the living." Here The Tree of Life – and God, Himself, are in that Garden. "Agapè" was right there! God is love. They could have eaten from The Tree of Life right then.

Romans 13:10 says that love is The Fulfillment of The Law: the "agapè" or the completion of The Law. So if God was with them – and they were one with God (all joined together, as one), then they would all be one (married as one flesh). They would have had Life Eternal. All their children could have lived forever, and would not have been required to go through what mankind has had to endure.

But, they chose The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil and said: “No, we do not choose to follow your way; but choose to follow our own ideas of right and wrong.” Do you know why Satan is the father of lies? First, he believes his own lies. There has never been a better liar than a person who believes his own lies.

There are people who will lie to you, and all the while believe they are telling you the truth. By using deception, they never tell you a total lie. Part of what they say is true. When Satan tried to tempt Eve with the fruit, Eve said: “God says we shouldn't eat it because when we eat it we are going to die.” And what did Satan say: “You are not going to die.” He was telling her the truth, but he didn't tell her that they would need to be Saved first. Also, he didn't tell her there is a first death – and a second death.

SATAN DECEIVED EVE

Satan deceived Eve. Satan reasoned with Eve. In essence, he said, Look, the reason God doesn't want you to eat the fruit of The Tree of Knowledge is because you will become wise – and know “right” from “wrong.” By the hard knocks of trial and error, Eve decided for herself what was right or wrong. Eve bought into the lie because Satan partly told the truth. Eve was not going to die instantly.

Now, do you see what must be restored? Christ came to save oneness with God. God's Purpose in I Corinthians 15 is to become “all in all.” God is reproducing Himself. God is “agapè.” Christ came to restore marriage, as planned from the very beginning.

Matthew 22:1-13 ¹And Jesus answered and spake unto them again by parables, and said, ²The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son. ³And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come. ⁴Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage. ⁵But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise: ⁶And the remnant took his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them. ⁷But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city. ⁸Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. ⁹Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage. ¹⁰So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests. ¹¹And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment: ¹²And he said unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. ¹³Then said the king to the

servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

In Matthew 22, Jesus Christ spoke specifically about marriage and The Kingdom. However, it is vital to note that everything from Genesis 1 to Revelation 22 is all about MARRIAGE. This is an important part of the puzzle. God's marriage is about both husband and wife becoming one. God is reproducing Himself in you. When Christ said: **“Unless you eat My body and drink My blood, you can have nothing to do with Me.”** This means that various ones will be excluded from The Marriage.

MARRIAGE AGREEMENT

Passover (communion) was The Marriage Agreement when The Disciples ate His body and drank His blood – and became one flesh. There is a profound meaning in this, as you can readily perceive. This insight often occurs when a person eats the bread and drinks the wine. Matthew 22: **“¹And Jesus answered and spake unto them again by parables, and said, ²The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son.”** The subject is The Kingdom of God and about New Jerusalem.

Christ came to restore marriage the way it was intended from the beginning. **“³And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.”** Most assumed that when this marriage took place between The King's Son and His Bride, those

people who had been called to the marriage were The Church. But, that is WRONG.

In Ephesians 5, Christ is specified as The Giver, and The Bride was The Church. How can The Guests be those being called to the marriage? They are not The Bride: **“³And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come. ⁴Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.”**

What is the marriage? The Passover – taking of bread and wine becoming one flesh is The Agreement. Passover is a Contractual Agreement. It is The Marriage Contract between Christ and The Church. The Marriage is The Feast. The Feast is the dinner, which comes later.

There is a big difference between The Contract, which was The New Testament, and The Feast. The New Testament is The New Contract between Christ and His Bride. The Feast is the invitation sent out to invite people to The Wedding. So, The Guests are different individuals from The Bride.

The Individuals who were invited to the marriage – treated the occasion with disdain. Hence, Judgment will be forthcoming. Later you will understand this is The Return of Christ, and The Marriage Feast is The Time of The Judgment. Understand this time frame correctly!

A NEW GUEST ROSTER

“⁸Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. ⁹Go ye therefore into the highways.”

Of course, the first call to The Guests was to ISRAEL, but – they missed out.

Then, they go and call others: **“...and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage. ¹⁰So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good:...”**

This is The Resurrection of The Just, and those to be judged (John 5:29).

Remember that The Parable of Wheat and Tares concerns the time when Christ said, The Wheat is The World, and The Seed is The Good Seed of The Son – while The Tares are The Children of Satan. So, these Guests were invited to the wedding – both the good and the bad. This is the time of The Great Judgment, and The Resurrection. It is, also, a long period of time. The Marriage Feast lasts for an extended period indeed: **“...and the wedding was furnished with guests. ¹¹And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment:...”** This is The Judgment Period.

Remember, you must be dressed in The Wedding Garment of Righteousness. Can you remember back to Cinderella when twelve o'clock starts striking? The stagecoach turns back into a pumpkin, and all the fine clothes turn to rags. This scene corresponds with: **“¹²And he said unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. ¹³Then said the king to the servants,**

Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.” These will be those farthest from New Jerusalem and the access to The Tree of Life.

CHRIST AND THE CHURCH

So the wedding is between Christ (The Groom), and The Church (The Bride). The Guests are those who are resurrected at the time of the resurrection, including both the good and the bad.

John 5:21-29 ²¹For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will. ²²For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgement unto the Son: ²³That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father which hath sent him. ²⁴Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life. ²⁵Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. ²⁶For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself; ²⁷And hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. ²⁸Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the

**which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice,
²⁹And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto
 the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil,
 unto the resurrection of damnation.**

The Son is The Groom, and The Son brings these people to Life Everlasting. Notice how many times the “son” is mentioned – for judgment, honor, and listening. You, should believe Christ, as your Husband, who sanctifies, and then, makes you Righteous, then you, as The Bride, represent The Church. You are going to be SAVED.

Then Christ said: “²⁵...**the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live** [this is the first resurrection]. ²⁶**For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself;**”

Jesus is The Groom. The Son and The Father are ONE. And if The Bride and Groom become ONE, then all is “at one” with God, The Father. The Groom loves you, and you love The Groom, and The Marriage takes place. “²⁸**Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice,**”

SECOND RESURRECTION

Only those called during THE FIRST RESURRECTION comprise The Bride of Christ. They have heard His voice. The Guests are called later (This text applies to the second resurrection.), for The Wedding Feast –

because if The Father is having a marriage for his Son and The Bride, then The Guests must be THE OTHERS in addition to The Son and The Bride.

Who are they? **“²⁹And shall come forth; they that have done good. unto the resurrection of life;”** When they sent out for The Guests, they went into the highways. The bad and the good, the wheat and the tares, were called together. This is The Marriage Feast, The Time of Judgment.

The judgment is not a time of horror; rather it is A Time of Release. It is a time of joy: **“²⁹And shall come forth; they that have done good. unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.”**

The word “damnation” is a poor English translation. The literal meaning is “a time of sentencing” – or in the Greek, “krisis” (what is called “*crisis*”). How many people come to The Wedding of The Bride and The Groom and The Guests?

Matthew 22:14 For many are called, but few are chosen.

Most people will be going in The Lake of Fire. When a person does not possess the proper garment, that person is thrown out – and there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth. What does Christ say, **“¹⁴For many are called [to the wedding], but few are chosen.”** That is quite clear.

100,000,000 PEOPLE

In Daniel 7:10 you find a reference to the number of individuals brought

before The Throne of Judgment. It was 10,000 times 10,000 – or one hundred million people. These are “the chosen few.” Daniel may have been correct, or perhaps he was merely giving an example of the numbers. What this implies, is that out of the billions of people who have lived on earth, there will be only about one hundred million people who will experience The Resurrection of The Just: “¹⁴**For many are called, but few are chosen.**”

Everyone who is in the future New Jerusalem is written in The Lamb's Book of Life. If you are not found written in The Lamb's Book of Life, then you will burn. Only those written in The Lamb's Book of Life, The Groom, The Bride and The Guests are part of The Marriage. The Lamb's Book of Life is about marriage. The Book of Life is a Marriage Registry. Christ said: “**Straight is the way and narrow is the gate and few there be that find it.**”

He is talking about the gate that goes into New Jerusalem. Christ tells you about New Jerusalem with The Twelve Gates, and The Path to get there is very straight and disciplined. It requires character and righteousness to pass through. Very few people will have the character to go through this gate. Those left out are dogs, liars, and whoremongers, who are thrown into The Lake of Fire.

In The Gospels, Jesus consistently talks about children. And when the little children came to Him, The Disciples tried to keep them away. Christ said: “**No, permit little children. Of such is the Kingdom of God.**” Unless you are like a little child, you shall in no manner enter into The Kingdom.

Christ will not marry just any woman. He will not allow any guests at His Wedding who do not have humility (“agapè” or love). Humble people are like children who can be taught. They are open-minded. They don’t get into arguments. They are looking for truth – and discerning the right way to do everything.

If you can spend a good portion of your time giving, as self-sacrifice for others, then you don’t have time to think about yourself. If you are productive with helping the poor and the sick – then you will not have idle time to think about yourself. If everything you do is to think about yourself, you probably won’t get into God’s Kingdom.

Song of Solomon 1:1-7 ¹The song of songs, which is Solomon’s. ²Let him kiss me with the kisses of his mouth: for thy love is better than wine. ³Because of the savour of thy good ointments thy name is as ointment poured forth, therefore do the virgins love thee. ⁴Draw me, we will run after thee: the king hath brought me into his chambers: we will be glad and rejoice in thee, we will remember thy love more than wine: the upright love thee. ⁵I am black, but comely, O ye daughters of Jerusalem, as the tents of Kedar, as the curtains of Solomon. ⁶Look not upon me, because I am black, because the sun hath looked upon me: my mother’s children were angry with me; they made me the keeper of the vineyards; but mine own vineyard have I not kept. ⁷Tell me, O thou whom my soul loveth, where

thou feedest, where thou makest thy flock to rest at noon: for why should I be as one that turneth aside by the flocks of thy companions?

CINDERELLA

The Song of Solomon could be portrayed as Cinderella with her lost slipper. The Book of Revelation could be compared to Snow White. Snow White is looking for her Prince riding on a white horse. She awaits his coming to wake her up. Don't forget, the seven dwarfs took care of Snow White until The Prince arrived.

The dwarfs represent The Seven Churches in Revelation. Dopey, Doc, Happy, Grumpy, et cetera. The Bible is not only the greatest love story that ever existed, but it is also the most wonderful love story – and perceived in the context of the Song of Solomon – it illustrates the path to take.

How did Snow White wake up? **“²Let him kiss me with the kisses of his mouth:...”** Snow White had to wait for the Prince to come and kiss her. **“for thy love is better than wine. ³Because of the savour of thy good ointments thy name is as ointment poured forth, therefore do the virgins love thee.”**

Cinderella had stepsisters (the other virgins) who were, also, interested in the prince. **“⁴Draw me, we will run after thee:...”** This is about “the virgins,” not The Bride. Then, **“The king hath brought me into his**

chambers: we will be glad and rejoice in thee, we will remember thy love more than wine: the upright love thee.”

In Cinderella’s story, she is the cinder maid who didn’t have decent clothes. She was required to do all the work for everyone: **“⁵I am black, but comely...”** “Comely” in English means “good looking.”

She is black from working in the fields from the rays of the sun: **“O ye daughters of Jerusalem, as the tents of Kedar, as the curtains of Solomon.”** These were black. **“⁶Look not upon me...”** In other words, don’t look upon me, Prince.

The Prince was coming to The Ball, and the stepsisters and the other virgins in the town were primping up. They were setting their hair, and getting their faces made up. They dressed with beautiful clothing.

But Cinderella is saying: **“⁶Look not upon me, because I am black, because the sun has looked upon me: my mother’s children [stepsisters], were angry with me [as with Cinderella]; they made me the keeper of the vineyards;...”** In other words, they made her do all the work: **“but mine own vineyard have I not kept.”**

She was not able to take care of herself. Can you see Cinderella in this story? **“Tell me, O thou whom my soul loveth, where thou feedest...”** Where is The Prince? Going on, the text says: **“where thou makest thy flock to rest at noon: for why should I be as one that turneth aside by the flocks of thy companions?”** Why should she be shunned away?

The similarity in the story of Cinderella to the original Biblical text is amazing. Going on with the theme, the fairy godmother gave her a beautiful outfit. She was dressed in Righteousness. She had a beautiful carriage, but she had to leave at twelve o'clock, or the carriage would turn into a pumpkin – and her clothes would return to rags.

What does Christ warn in Matthew 25 about the virgins who are wise and the ones who are foolish? Cinderella runs into the carriage and sprints home as it turns into a pumpkin. She barely makes it. What is the only way The Prince can tell that she is The Church? It is the slipper. Whose slipper is this? Now you can tie this together with The Law of Inheritance:

LAW OF INHERITANCE

Ruth 4:1-7 ¹Then went Boaz up the gate, and sat him down there: and, behold, the kinsman of whom Boaz spake came by; unto whom he said, Ho, such a one! Turn aside, sit down here. And he turned aside, and sat down. ²And he took ten men of the elders of the city, and said, Sit ye down here. And they sat down. ³And he said unto the kinsman, Naomi, that is come again out of the country of Moab, selleth a parcel of land, which was our brother Elimelech's: ⁴And I thought to advertise thee, saying, Buy it before the inhabitants, and before the elders of my people. If thou wilt redeem it, redeem it: but if thou wilt not redeem it, then tell me,

that I may know: for there is none to redeem it beside thee; and I am after thee. And he said, I will redeem it.
⁵Then said Boaz, What day thou buyest the field of the hand of Naomi, thou must buy it also of Ruth the Moabitess, the wife of the dead, to raise up the name of the dead upon his inheritance. ⁶And the kinsman said, I cannot redeem it for myself, lest I mar mine own inheritance: redeem thou my right to thyself; for I cannot redeem it. ⁷Now this was the manner in former time in Israel concerning redeeming and concerning changing, for to confirm all things: a man plucked off his shoe, and gave it to his neighbour: and this was a testimony in Israel.

The Bible contains the entire “marriage” saga. You will be surprised at what The Wedding is all about – and how it takes place at the end. In Ruth 4:1, Elimelech was an Israelite, who lived in the land of Israel. There was a famine in the land, so Elimelech took his wife Naomi and his two sons, and they left Israel for Moab.

Moab was a Gentile area following Pagan religions. Who does Elimelech and Naomi’s sons marry? They marry Gentile women. Elimelech, the husband, dies, and, eventually, the second son dies. One of Gentile wives wants to go back to her father’s home, but Ruth, although a Gentile also, stays with Naomi. Compare this with the time when Christ came, and was sent to Israel. The nation rejected Him – so, then, He went to The Gentiles.

That is why Ruth had to be a Gentile. That which was first, is last – and that which was last, is first. Israel should have been first, but ended up being last. Instead, The Gentiles came in first, as The Bride. This is the story of how Ruth had to become The Bride. It is a likely parallel to Christ and His Bride.

Ruth is tied into The Law of Inheritance through Israel and her future husband. As time goes by, Naomi decides to leave Moab, and go back to her own nation. Ruth, her daughter-in-law, who has endeared herself to Naomi, as a daughter, decides to go with Naomi (while the other daughter-in-law had gone back to her father's family).

REACHING ISRAEL'S LAND

When they reach the land of Israel, Naomi tells Ruth to work in Boaz's vineyard, since he was a kinsman. This is an important point. In it, you will perceive the reason why Christ had to be your Savior. Boaz agrees with Ruth to go ahead and "redeem her." Now get this. Boaz had to "redeem" her. He was able to redeem her in The Inheritance through the family, because he was a kinsman to Naomi. The Law states this had to happen. This is another piece of the puzzle.

Boaz, as the leading kinsman, redeemed her. This could also coincide to The Prince with Cinderella's slipper. In Ruth 4: **"¹Then went Boaz up to the gate, and sat him down there: and, behold, the kinsman of whom Boaz spake came by...**" There was one kinsman who was ahead of Boaz. A relative through Elimelech's lineage was a closer relative. Therefore, **"unto whom he said, Ho, such a one! Turn aside, sit down**

here. And he turned aside, and sat down. ²And he took ten men of the elders of the city, and said, Sit ye down here. And they sat down. ³And he said unto the kinsman,”

This relative had first choice to Naomi and Ruth’s inheritance: **“Naomi, that is come again out of the country of Moab, selleth a parcel of land, which was our brother Elimelech’s:...”** This concerns The Law of Inheritance. **“⁴And I thought to advertise thee...”** This is the way they contractually made everyone understand that they were coming to an agreement, signing a contract: **“saying, Buy it before the inhabitants.”**

A WOMAN WAS PROPERTY

What kind of marriage does The Law promote at this time? The woman is considered property along with the land. As property, the purchaser must buy her: **“and before the elders of my people. If thou wilt redeem it, redeem it.”** Then, Boaz asked the kinsman: **“If you want to buy her, you can because you have first choice to redeem Ruth.”** Then he adds: **“...but if thou wilt not redeem it, then tell me, that I may know: for there is none to redeem it beside thee; and I am after thee.”** He is saying if you don’t buy her, then I have the right to buy her.

Remember she is property at this point. That is what Deuteronomy 24:1 tells you: **“...And he [kinsman] said, I will redeem it. ⁵Then said Boaz, What day thou buyest the field of the hand of Naomi, thou must buy it also of Ruth the Moabitess, the wife of the dead....”** This is the contract being spelled out. It is not merely a contract between people for people, but, also, for the land.

By buying the land that belonged to Elimelech, he also buys Naomi and Ruth – with Ruth, as his wife. Notice: **“...the wife of the dead, to raise up the name of the dead [so, The Inheritance could continue] upon his inheritance. ⁶And the kinsman said, I cannot redeem it for myself, lest I mar mine own inheritance: redeem thou my right to thyself...”**

What this means is that Boaz could buy her, but the kinsman could not do so: **“...for I cannot redeem it. ⁷Now this was the manner in former time in Israel concerning redeeming and concerning changing, for to confirm all things: a man plucked off his shoe...”**

CINDERELLA'S SLIPPER

This brings you to a most interesting point about Cinderella's slipper. Cinderella's shoe was all that was righteous. The shoe is her Agreement to marry The Prince, just as Boaz with Ruth. Notice the words: **“...his shoe, and gave it to his neighbour: and this was a testimony [contract] in Israel.”** In The Cinderella Story, The Prince tries to find the woman whose foot will fit the slipper. Why is the slipper at the gate? This is because the only way to get into The Kingdom of God is through The Gate.

Each gate in The New Heaven and The New Earth represents A Tribe of Israel. You cannot come into The Kingdom of God except through Israel. Unless you become A Spiritual Israelite, you cannot be The Bride of Christ. At the time of restitution, physical Israel, who rejected Christ during The Millennium, will then have their chance to become Spiritual

Israelites. They will be required to perform The Whole Law – which they did not do before, in order, to come to Christ.

The pieces of the puzzle all fit together. There is New Jerusalem with The Twelve Gates, each one being A Tribe of Israel. It is the only way you can get into The Kingdom. The Bride is present because she is part of The Salvation Walls – along with The Apostles.

Why did Boaz have to sit at The Gate? He sat there because it was the only way to carry out The Law of Inheritance to God. The Elders at The Gate bound The Agreement there. The only way you can get through The Gates in The Kingdom of God – is to become a Spiritual Israelite (Romans 2). It fits the puzzle and makes sense. It is, truly, a great love story.

OUTLINE OF THE ROYAL MARRIAGE

Why was Christ required to redeem (pay the price) for all of you? Hebrews 4 is the outline for entering into God's Rest, The Sabbath's Rest, or New Jerusalem.

Isaiah 58:1-10 ¹Cry aloud, spare not, lift up thy voice like a trumpet, and shew my people their transgression, and the house of Jacob their sins. ²Yet they seek me daily, and delight to know my ways, as a nation that did righteousness, and forsook not the ordinance of their God: they ask of me the ordinances of justice; they take delight in approaching to God. ³Wherefore have we fasted, say they, and thou seest not? Wherefore have we

afflicted our soul, and thou takest no knowledge? Behold, in the day of your fast ye find pleasure, and exact all your labours. ⁴Behold, ye fast for strife and debate, and to smite with the fist of wickedness: ye shall not fast as ye do this day, to make your voice to be heard on high. ⁵Is it such a fast that I have chosen? a day for a man to afflict his soul? Is it to bow down his head as a bulrush, and to spread sackcloth and ashes under him? wilt thou call this a fast, and an acceptable day to the Lord? ⁶Is not this the fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke? ⁷Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? when thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh? ⁸Then shall thy light break forth as the morning, and thine health shall spring forth speedily: and thy righteousness shall go before thee: the glory of the Lord shall be thy reward. ⁹Then shalt thou call, and the Lord shall answer; thou shalt cry, and he shall say, Here I am. If thou take away from the midst of thee the yoke, the putting forth of the finger, and speaking vanity; ¹⁰And if thou draw out thy soul to the hungry, and satisfy the afflicted soul; then shall thy light rise in obscurity, and thy darkness be as the noon day;

Isaiah 58 and beyond covers the topic of Marriage. You learn how to BECOME RIGHTEOUS, and TO QUALIFY to be The Bride. You, also, learn how the marriage takes place. When considering the content of Isaiah 58:1-2, you learn that these people are seeking God. In Hebrew, they are called, The Hasidim, The Righteous Ones. They are chosen or saints.

“³Wherefore have we fasted, say they...” Remember the parable that Christ gave about The Pharisee and the poor man. The Pharisee said: **“I fast twice a week and I tithe.”** Does this sound familiar to the way some people speak today? They fast and pay tithes of all they have. The poor man comes in, he has not fasted, or tithed – and says: “I am a sinner.” Hence, Christ said he would be in The Kingdom.

The person who admits that he is a sinner, and not worthy, is in The Kingdom: **“...and thou seest not? wherefore have we afflicted our soul...”** Why do you fast? What is your motive? This instruction is about Atonement and The Jubilee.

But God says: **“Behold, in the day of your fast [Day of Atonement] ye find pleasure, and exact all your labours.”** These people are still seeking everything for themselves. He goes on to say: **“⁴Behold, ye fast for strife and debate, and to smite with the fist of wickedness....”** All this is hypocrisy. The warning is: **“...ye shall not fast as ye do this day, [Atonement] to make your voice to be heard on high.”**

God did not want people to make a show of piety, by means of a physical work of The Law. God says: **“⁶Is not this the fast that I have chosen? to**

loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free.” That is the type of fast that leads to freedom.

CHRIST'S BRIDE

The Bride of Christ must be humble – and a giving person. This is TRUE CHRISTIANITY. THE JUBILEE YEAR IS THE MARRIAGE FEAST. By counting fifty from the midst of Unleavened Bread until The Feast of Pentecost brings about The Bride's Jubilee.

The Bride, is the first fruit, and is redeemed before the time of release or Jubilee. She is redeemed in a shorter period of time, which culminates at Pentecost when she gets her Inheritance of God's Holy Spirit. This is: **“...to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke?”**

During The Jubilee, all debt and sin is forgiven. **“⁷Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? when thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh?”** This instruction is all about marriage and family. **“⁸Then shall thy light break forth as the morning, and thine health shall spring forth speedily: and thy righteousness shall go before thee: the glory of the Lord shall be thy reward. ⁹Then shalt thou call, and the Lord shall answer...”** This is when God will be with you in The Kingdom. Notice it says: **“...thou shalt cry, and he shall say, Here I am.”** This is a theme that appears to be right out of The Book of Revelation.

SABBATH OF REST

How does a person keep The Sabbath? God intends that you do good works on The Sabbath – and call it a delight (Isaiah 58:13). A person does not do his or her own pleasure on this day. They do good works. God and Jesus worked on The Sabbath by doing good works (John 5:17). The true Sabbath concerns The Rest, The Marriage, The New Jerusalem – and you are to delight in that PROMISE. The first Sabbath in Genesis was very good (Genesis 2:3).

Isaiah 58:14 Then shalt thou delight thyself in the Lord; and I will cause thee to ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed thee with the heritage of Jacob thy father: for the mouth of the Lord hath spoken it.

The Inheritance came from Abraham through Jacob. The Righteous enter The Gates of New Jerusalem. The Covenant comes through Israel, and through Abraham. In Galatians, you learn that New Jerusalem is the mother of us all (Galatians 4:26). Perhaps, now, you will be able to read The Bible with more of the main pieces of the puzzle assembled together for your greater understanding.

Isaiah 59:1-2 ¹Behold, the Lord's hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear: ²But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.

God can and will SAVE EVERYONE. Atheists say: "Why doesn't God show Himself?" God can't show Himself when there is sin abounding. No man hath seen The Father except The Son. Sin is corrupting, and God cannot and will not be around sin. At The Marriage, if you don't have the right garments (without sin), then you will burn.

Isaiah 59:20-21 ²⁰And the Redeemer shall come to Zion, and unto them that turn from transgression in Jacob, saith the Lord. ²¹As for me, this is my covenant with them, saith the Lord; My spirit that is upon thee, and my words which I have put in thy mouth, shall not depart out of thy mouth, nor out of the mouth of thy seed, nor out of the mouth of thy seed's seed, saith the Lord, from henceforth and for ever.

CHRIST TO JERUSALEM

Remember, how Ruth was redeemed? The Redeemer is Christ coming to Jerusalem. THIS IS HIS RETURN. Christ is known as The Redeemer and God will be with "all," forever. He says: "²¹**Thy people also shall be all righteous, they shall inherit the land for ever; the branch of my planting, the work of my hands, that I may be glorified**"(Isaiah 60:21).

Isaiah 62:4 Thou shalt no more be termed Forsaken; neither shall thy land any more be termed Desolate: but thou shall be called Hephzi-bah, and thy land Beulah: for the Lord delighteth in thee, and thy land shall be married.

Now, to an important promise: **“⁴Thou shalt no more be termed Forsaken.”** God forsook Israel. Then in talking about Zion: **“neither shall thy land any more be termed Desolate....”** In The Law of Inheritance, Boaz bought the land first; then, he bought his bride. From Boaz through Ruth (a Gentile) came Jesse, from whom came David, from whom came Jesus.

So you see the line comes through The Church, with The Gentiles, first. Israel did not accept Christ, The Groom – so God called The Gentiles first to become The Son’s Bride. That is why Ruth had to be a Gentile who married into the line of Abraham.

Ruth became a Spiritual Israelite – or The Body of Christ. The result is that: **“⁴...neither shall thy land any more be termed Desolate: but thou shalt be called Hephzi-bah [Hephzi-bah in the Hebrew means “delight”], and thy land Beulah [the word “Beulah” in the Hebrew means “married”] for the Lord delighteth in thee, and thy land shall be married.”** So, The Marriage includes The Land and His Bride.

When Boaz redeemed Elimelech’s land, he bought the land as a possession, along with Ruth and Naomi. Therefore, all was redeemed. That is why Christ was required to die – and, then, REDEEM YOU FROM SATAN. Only, then, could an individual receive God’s Inheritance. Isaiah 58 starts off with who is CLOTHED WITH RIGHTEOUSNESS? (Hassidim).

CORRECT WEDDING GARMENTS

What does it take to be clothed with THE RIGHT MARRIAGE GARMENT? Who has the right shoe? Like Cinderella, Boaz gave his shoe to fit righteous Ruth. Ruth accepted The True God and His Inheritance. This is a lesson in humility by giving to the poor. It is releasing the ox from the heavy burden. Clearly, calling The Sabbath Rest a delight – is in doing good works. Now, you can see where more of the pieces fit together in the puzzle.

What do you think is the greatest holy time of all? If you were going to pick a holy time, which would you pick? Would it be The Sabbath, or The Holy Days? Read on. It gets better!

Leviticus 25:1-6 ¹And the Lord spake unto Moses, in mount Sinai, saying, ²Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, When ye come into the land which I give you, then shall the land keep a sabbath unto the Lord. ³Six years thou shalt sow thy field, and six years thou shalt prune thy vineyard, and gather in the fruit thereof; ⁴But in the seventh year shall be a sabbath of rest unto the land, a sabbath for the Lord: thou shalt neither sow thy field, nor prune thy vineyard. ⁵That which groweth of its own accord of thy harvest thou shalt not reap, neither gather the grapes of thy vine undressed: for it is a year of rest unto the land. ⁶And the sabbath of the land shall be meat for you; for thee,

and for thy servant, and for thy maid, and for thy hired servant, and for thy stranger that so journeth with thee.

In Leviticus 25, you will see The Marriage of The Land and The People, along with the reason Christ had to REDEEM you. Hebrews 10:1 declares that THE WHOLE LAW is THE SHADOW OF THINGS TO COME. Let The Law lead you to Christ, The Groom, Your Husband. When The Law leads you to Christ, then you are fulfilling The Law and becoming “agapè” (love), which completes The Law. This all takes place when Christ returns. It is The Time of Restitution. He comes to Israel for The Restoration of all things. The first item to be restored is The Land Sabbath during The Seventh Year. Perhaps Jesus will return in The Seventh Year of the calendar for The Land Sabbath.

The strangers, The Gentiles, and all who come into that land are at rest with the land. The land, at that time, is going to produce so much that no one can eat it all, and the sea will have a great abundance of fish. Now, to the holiest time of all – for everyone. This is The Marriage Feast, the time of rejoicing! But certain people were left out of The Book of Life of The Lamb because they did not qualify. Only those who are called as The Bride or Guests are in The Lamb’s Book. Everyone else is released from his other sins at a later time.

Leviticus 25:8-20 ⁸And thou shalt number seven sabbaths of years unto thee, seven times seven years; and the space of the seven sabbaths of years shall be unto thee forty and nine years. ⁹Then shalt thou cause the trumpet of the jubilee to sound on the tenth day of

the seventh month, in the day of atonement [one with God] shall ye make the trumpet sound throughout all your land. ¹⁰And ye shall hallow the fiftieth year, and proclaim liberty throughout all the land unto all the inhabitants thereof: it shall be a jubilee unto you; and ye shall return every man unto his possession, and ye shall return every man unto his family. ¹¹A jubilee shall that fiftieth year be unto you: ye shall not sow, neither reap that which groweth of itself in it, nor gather the grapes in it of thy vine undressed. ¹²For it is the jubilee; it shall be holy unto you: ye shall eat the increase thereof out of the field. ¹³In the year of this jubilee ye shall return every man unto his possession. ¹⁴And if thou sell ought unto thy neighbour, or buyest ought of thy neighbour's hand, ye shall not oppress one another: ¹⁵According to the number of years after the jubilee thou shalt buy of thy neighbour, and according unto the number of years of the fruits he shall sell unto thee: ¹⁶According to the multitude of years thou shalt increase the price thereof, and according to the fewness of years thou shalt diminish the price of it: for according to the number of the years of the fruits doth he sell unto thee. ¹⁷Ye shall not therefore oppress one another; but thou shalt fear thy God: for I am the Lord your God. ¹⁸Wherefore ye shall do my statutes, and keep my judgments, and do them: and ye shall dwell in

the land in safety. ¹⁹And the land shall yield her fruit, and ye shall eat your fill, and dwell therein in safety. ²⁰And if ye shall say, What shall we eat the seventh year? behold, we shall not sow, nor gather in our increase:

The Spring Harvest has 50 days. It is a short period of time for The Bride to be Redeemed before the 50th year: **“⁹Then shalt thou cause the trumpet of the jubilee to sound.”** The word “Jubilee” means “feast,” or “marriage supper.” This is the “horn of plenty” at harvest time. It is the time of The Jubilee. It is a time of great abundance, because when God pours out all of His love, then everything He has becomes your Inheritance.

You had better understand this wonderful God you worship! Do you think that God could destroy any of His children? God disciplines every son He loves, and He destroys none (Hebrews 12). So The Jubilee text continues with: **“⁹Then shalt thou cause the trumpet of jubilee to sound [when?] on the tenth day of the seventh month...”** This is The Jubilee. It is The Marriage Feast, which begins on The Day of Atonement.

What type of fast does God want? He does not want you looking maudlin. He doesn't want you in ragged clothing. He wants you to be set free. He wants you to give to the poor. He wants you to help individuals in need. He wants you to release everybody's debt or sin.

PROCLAIM LIBERTY

This is true love. Beautiful, isn't it? You are to be ONE with God. How long does this Holy Day last? He says: **“¹⁰And ye shall hallow the fiftieth year, and proclaim liberty throughout all the land unto all the inhabitants thereof: it shall be a jubilee unto you; and ye shall return every man unto his possession.”**

God gave An Inheritance to Israel; but as you found in The Book of The Law, God, also, gave An Inheritance to The Gentiles. This is the time when there is no more debt to pay: **“¹⁰...return every man unto his possession.”** It doesn't require redeeming. Do you get this point? There is no price here. No Savior is needed, but only a Judge.

That is why these people are not required to be in The Book of Life, because only those in The Book of Life are those who are to be redeemed before the time: **“¹⁰...and ye shall return every man unto his possession, and ye shall return every man unto his family.”**

FEAST OF MARRIAGE

Have you ever wondered why The Church called their feasts by the name of “love” feasts – or “Agapè” feasts? It is because it is THE FEAST OF MARRIAGE. **“¹²For it is the jubilee; it shall be holy unto you: ye shall eat the increased thereof out of the field. ¹³In the year of this jubilee ye shall return every man unto his possession. ¹⁴And if thou sell ought**

unto thy neighbour, or buyest ought of thy neighbour's hand, ye shall not oppress one another...." This certainly sounds like Isaiah 58.

If it is the 25th year, and there are 25 more years until The Jubilee Year, and if you want to buy a person's land, then you can only buy it, and retain it for the 25 years that remain. This is why Christ had to come and pay a price. If you want the land back before the 25 years, you must redeem it. That is why "Baal" (marriage) was a woman or a possession, just as the land was a possession. Christ had to come to redeem you before The Jubilee.

Do you understand the impact of all this? Christians get Saved in The First Resurrection as Christ's Bride. This is the great mystery of The Church and Christ. Paul explained this in Ephesians 5: **"¹⁶According to the multitude of years thou shalt increase the price thereof, and according to the fewness of years thou shalt diminish the price of it:"** The parable of the penny comes in here. He said that in the 9th hour, He would pay the workers a penny. Then in the 11th hour, He said He would pay them a penny.

It was His to give, and He determined the price. He is The Redeemer. **"¹⁵and according unto the number of the years of the fruits he shall sell unto thee: ¹⁷Ye shall not therefore oppress one another; but thou shalt fear thy God: for I am the Lord your God. ¹⁸Wherefore ye shall do my statutes, and keep my judgments, and do them; and ye shall dwell in the land in safety."** This is talking about the time of The Restoration.

Leviticus 25:23-27 ²³The land shall not be sold for ever: for the land is mine; for ye are strangers and sojourners with me. ²⁴And in all the land of your possession ye shall grant a redemption for the land. ²⁵If thy brother be waxen poor, and hath sold away some of his possession, and if any of his kin come to redeem it, then shall he redeem that which his brother sold. ²⁶And if the man have none to redeem it, and himself be able to redeem it; ²⁷Then let him count the years of the sale thereof, and restore the overplus unto the man to whom he sold it; that he may return unto his possession.

Explaining The Redemption: “²³The land shall not be sold for ever:” Therefore, the death penalty on humanity cannot be forever. “²³For the land is mine; for ye are strangers and sojourners with me. ²⁴And in all the land of your possession ye shall grant a redemption for the land.” You are able to redeem it. That is why Boaz redeemed the land, first.

Now carefully analyze the text of verses 25-27 above. The message is that Christ had to come as Savior to pay a price for your “Redemption” by His death. This is before The Jubilee. That is why Pentecost, The Spring Harvest, is the early harvest. This is until The Fall Harvest of The Great Jubilee of The Last Great Day when you have a Redeemer.

If you had no Redeemer, then you could not be released from your debt – or The Marriage of The Land and People, until The Jubilee. The Jubilee is The Fiftieth Year when everyone else is RELEASED (all not redeemed).

To be Redeemed, Christ literally had to come and pay a price for you, to buy you before The Jubilee.

That is the reason you are in The Lamb's Book of Life, and you go into The Marriage along with some of The Guests. If anything reveals the meaning of God's Word, then MARRIAGE explains it all. When you study Isaiah 58 through Isaiah 66, the writings fill in all the pieces of the time period. Study Leviticus 25 about The Redemption and The Jubilee.

TWO VITAL ROLES

Christ has two roles. First, is that of THE REDEEMER (before Jubilee for The Bride and Guests), and secondly, as THE JUDGE to RELEASE everyone else, after the sentence (The Jubilee).

Many worldly churches just keep the bread and the wine (Communion), without The Jubilee, but they do not know God is SAVING EVERYONE. With this major piece of the puzzle solved, you now have the complete picture. Christ came as Redeemer before The Year of Jubilee. He could buy you and Redeem you before The Jubilee. He will restore everything to the original Marriage – The Bride and The Guests, but no one else.

When The Bride and Groom are married, and The Marriage Jubilee (wedding feast) takes place, then where are the children? When do The Bride and Groom have children? Where do they come from?

Psalms 40 reveals to you God's thoughts that are so wonderful for His Creation. He talks about Christ and how Christ had to qualify. He had to

Redeem you, and then gives everything He has. It is overwhelming.

Revelation 19 tells about God's beautiful PURPOSES FOR HIS CREATION:

Revelation 19:1 And after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia; Salvation, and glory, and honour, and power, unto the Lord our God:

Revelation 19:7 Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready.

Chapter 18 speaks about the fall of Babylon and the great whore. She is called a whore and doesn't think she will be a widow. The fall of Babylon and this great false woman is followed by instruction concerning The True Woman of Christ in Revelation 19. So, Isaiah 58 ties in with this, by means of showing how to make yourself ready, by getting DRESSED IN RIGHTEOUSNESS.

ARMIES OF GOD

Revelation 19:14-16 ¹⁴And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. ¹⁵And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he

treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God. ¹⁶And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh, a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS:

Here comes Christ (The Prince) who is now ready to resurrect His Bride (The Church) – just like Snow White. The fine linen that is white and clean is clothing for bodies of RIGHTEOUSNESS. He is: **“KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.”**

The Prince is coming back on the white horse with all his armies to receive The Church (Snow White). This coincides with the child’s story about The Wizard of Oz. What did Dorothy need to do? She had to find THE RIGHT PATH to arrive back home. Jesus said: **“I am the Alpha and the Omega. I am the beginning and the end.”** Dorothy (Eve) was hopelessly lost.

Just as Eve lost God, she, also, lost her Husband (or the way he should have been). When you read The Song of Solomon, you realize that she LOST ETERNAL LIFE. That is why she was trying to find her way back. When she winds through all the mazes, she sees New Jerusalem off in the distance. What does it look like? It is like an emerald rainbow.

Do you remember the song “Over the Rainbow” in the background? Who is over the rainbow? God is. That is the story of The Wizard of Oz. Remember Dorothy had shoes that were special, just like Cinderella’s slippers. Man has borrowed concepts from The Bible by writing these children’s fairytales.

Revelation 21:1-6 ¹And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. ²And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. ³And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. ⁴And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. ⁵And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. ⁶And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is a thirst of the fountain of the water of life freely.

THE FINAL SCENE

NEW JERUSALEM IS THE WEDDING SITE. It is The Marriage of The Land and The People. God now establishes his abode with The People. There will be no more pain, sorrow, or suffering of any kind. This is The True Sabbath Rest. All the former things are passed away – and now this is like The Garden of Eden. IT IS PARADISE – THE BEGINNING AND

THE END. This includes The Guests at The Wedding and all others. They will receive of THE FOUNTAIN OF THE WATER OF LIFE FREELY.

These are all those who are written in The Book of The Life of The Lamb. The Book of The Life of The Lamb is The Marriage and The Marriage Feast. If you are not invited to the marriage or marriage feast, you will get burned, BUT ONLY TO THE POINT OF YOUR REPENTANCE. It is that plain. It is that simple.

CHAPTER 9

THE COVENANTS

God has had A PLAN of reproducing Himself from the very beginning of time. In fact, The Bible was created as a puzzle; so everyone has a chance to be called, but only at his own appointed time. When Christ returns to this earth, He will put down all the enemies of God. This includes Satan who will be thrown into The Lake of Fire. Then Christ will turn everything over to God, The Father.

This theme of complete victory by Christ is a powerful one. In due course, His Rule will be followed by the consummate act of turning everything over to God, The Father. This is the subject of this vital text in I Corinthians:

I Corinthians 15:28 And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.

There are basically FIVE DIFFERENT COVENANTS, OR AGREEMENTS that God made in order to bring His Purpose to fruition.

FIVE COVENANTS

To create a universe with a Family and Sons, God arranged His Plan within five separate agreements. Four of those will eventually produce The Kingdom of God (Sons of God.) The fifth, and final agreement, is when God establishes His Kingdom (of God) – and makes everything new.

Each time God makes An Agreement (or Covenant), it is for a different specific Purpose. Furthermore, each Covenant is based on different requirements. Many worldly Churches get confused with the various Covenants – so Christians argue and debate The Covenants. Since these Agreements have DIFFERENT PURPOSES, it is important that you understand The Purpose of each Agreement (Covenant).

All of God's Covenants will finally result in all of mankind becoming Sons of God. God made these Agreements with either one person, a group of people, or with the whole world. These Agreements were made with Adam and Eve, with one nation (Israel), and, finally, with all nations.

It can be a bit confusing when a person does not understand the end result for each separate Covenant. For those who earnestly want to understand, God makes it eminently clear – and keeps it very simple for you. But this depends upon the reader following each scripture step-by-step.

God used one of His powers (of name or title) in reference to a particular Agreement. To know the titles (names), which God uses – there are six of them in The Old Testament – and one in The New Testament. Even

God's name (title) causes Christians to argue. Each title or name denotes what God is doing in a particular situation.

ACCURATE IDENTITY THROUGH NAMES

God names things for what they are. He used a name in a contract that was drawn at the time. Therefore, He revealed His Purpose for that particular contract. When He uses "Elohim," it is a plural word meaning "many." God is reproducing Himself. Many Christians believe in a trinity – while others hold to the notion of just two gods. But, there is only one God. Few understand that He uses one of His Names depicting what He is accomplishing, at a particular time.

When God came to deal with Israel, as a nation, He became YHWH (JHVH). He was never known by that name to any of the fathers such as Abraham, Isaac, or Jacob. YHWH (JHVH), I AM THAT I AM. So YHWH (JHVH) was the name He used just for Israel. Abraham not only had "Elohim," but "El Shaddai." So "Elohim" was the plural or universal God who was all encompassing (God's Purpose is "to be all and in all").

When God deals with the name "Elohim," He is talking about being in everything – or dealing on a "universal" basis. When He was talking to Abraham, He was, also, "Elohim" dealing universally – and as "The Mighty Pourer Forth" or "Nurturer," and "El Shaddai" – which not only means "Mighty," but "Nurturing" and "Prospering." When He talked to Abraham, He was "Elohim" as a "Nurturer," "The Mighty Giver" for the whole universe. He was The One who made everyone prosper.

In the Hebrew, “JHVH” means the “merciful,” “just,” “good,” “righteous,” and “judgmental God.” This is the name He used when dealing with Israel. God wanted Israel to repent, but Israel was stubborn and was unrepentant. That was The Purpose of His Covenant with them. The Covenant, which included The Law, was designed to bring them to Christ. The Law was to bring Israel to repentance.

Many Christians think of God as being very stern. In a manner of speaking, He really is very demanding – “an eye for an eye,” and “a tooth for a tooth.” In His multiplicity of different names, God will reveal what He is doing in each Covenant or Agreement.

WHY GOD IS A FATHER

When you get to The New Testament, you find a God with, yet, a different name: Our Father. This is a Personal Father with a one-on-one relationship through His Son, Jesus Christ, as a Family. So your Father created a Family relationship.

God became a Father who gives, teaches, instructs, forgives, loves, and has drawn up a Will for your Inheritance. These Agreements not only appropriately fit the very name they represent, but the name God uses is to tie it in with a particular Covenant. That key will help your understanding when you study your Bible.

Hebrews 4:2-3 ²For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it.

³For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.

God's Sabbath Rest is Paradise in The Garden of Eden, and it was very good. Everything was perfect. But God gave instructions to Adam and Eve, making An Agreement with them after He created them. A Covenant was created in Eden. Since there was no Law, the standard was FAITH or Belief with this first Covenant.

Adam and Eve didn't realize they were naked. They learned this after the first sin. Consider the situation posed later: **"...As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest [referring back to the beginning]: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world."** This is when everything was complete in The Garden of Eden.

In The Book of Revelation, God tells you that He is The Alpha and The Omega. God tells you that the beginning and the end are one and the same. The end picks up from the beginning to complete God's Plan. Christ came **"to save [restore] what was lost"** (Matthew 18:11). Both are concerned with entering God's Rest.

THE WORD OF GOD

Christ became The Word of God. Jesus Christ said He did what The Father told Him to do. That statement alone ought to explain that there is only one God. The Word (before Christ became human) didn't exist as

another “Being” because THAT WORD became Christ. He spoke, and acted like The Father.

So, Christ “**became the Word of God**” (John 1:14), or The Living Word of God. In Revelation, He is, also, referred to as The Alpha and The Omega, as well as, The Word of God. From the beginning, He was GOD’S WORD.

Because Adam and Eve did not have the FAITH, they did not enter into God’s Rest (Sabbath) nor were they permitted to remain in The Garden of Eden. They were cut off from The Tree of Life. Paradise was lost, and as a result, Christ was required to come to restore this idyllic state for not only Adam and Eve, but for you, also.

For thousands of years, individuals have asked why God didn’t make humans perfect in the beginning – and give them everything wonderful in His Kingdom. He tried. He gave Adam and Eve that chance, but God had to give them free choice – because God Himself has free choice.

When God gave them “the right” to choose, He made An Agreement with them saying: “Here is The Tree of Life, and here is The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. You must decide what is ‘right’ and ‘wrong.’” That was the FIRST AGREEMENT between God and man.

Adam was a type, or a figure of Jesus Christ (Romans 5:14). Eve, whose name means “the mother of all living,” was the type of the mother for everyone, or New Jerusalem, who is from Above. So, Adam and Eve, as a

type, could have been Christ and The Church. Notice, that they, also, had been joined according to God's Marriage during this time.

Genesis 1:27-28 ²⁷So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. ²⁸And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.

MADE IN THE IMAGE OF GOD

In Genesis 1, God is “Elohim,” the all-encompassing God who is “all and in all.” Had Adam and Eve chosen correctly, then all their generations would not have had to suffer these thousands of years. In Genesis 1:26: **“And God said, Let us make man in our image....”**

This is just the same as with the 24 elders, and all the sons – that were not begotten of God. He said: **“Let us make man in our image [the marriage].** ²⁸**And God blessed them [Adam and Eve].** ²⁷**So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.”**

Adam and Eve were married as one flesh. Not only is God dominantly male – but, He, also, has a female side – and yet together they are in God. Christ is your Husband – and The Church is The Bride becoming ONE

with Christ in God's type of LOVE. Therefore, you, also, are becoming ONE with God, The Father.

You are a Son, a reproduction of God. ^{“28}...**God blessed them** [he married them]. **And God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply** [God wants children] **and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.”**

FIRST COVENANT AGREEMENT

In Genesis 2, God told this first couple about the two trees: The First Agreement between God and man. It is a Covenant. Furthermore, the name “Elohim” besides being plural also means, “covenant keeper.” So God as “Elohim” enters into Covenants or Agreements – which He will not break. It is A Universal Agreement. In the beginning, Adam had it all. He and Eve were in Paradise. They had ETERNAL LIFE (Tree of Life), but they, also, had the choice of death. **THIS WAS THE FIRST AGREEMENT.**

Four more Covenants will be covered. These are The Covenants made with various human beings. Then, along came Satan. Galatians tells you very plainly that The Law was added 430 years after Abraham. Paul also said, **“Where there is no law, there is no [what?] sin”** (Romans 5:13). If God doesn't reveal His Truth to you, then you are not responsible. All they had to do was believe God. All they had to do was have FAITH and eat of The Tree of Life. That was The Covenant, and it was The Agreement.

Instead they sold themselves to Satan. In the Hebrew language, Satan is “Hay-lale,” translated by Jerome (a Catholic priest), into “Lucifer.” The Hebrew word is “Hay-lale” which means “bright bolster.” Satan’s idol for marriage was Baal, “the god of fertility.” Eve bought into Satan’s story. When they ate from The Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, they recognized they were naked. Only then, did they realize the woman was a “sex object” for reproduction. Hence, she became a slave or property of the man.

Satan is the god of this world. In Genesis 3:15, The Seed would come and Redeem The World by buying them back (by His death) from Satan’s domination. They had followed Satan’s system and Satan’s type of marriage. There were two types of marriages: (1) Godly marriage, which is true love (“Agapè) while (2) Satan’s marriage, is “eros,” “passion,” “emotion,” “sex object,” or “compatibility” and “philia.” You are presented with two opposite types of marriage.

If Adam and Eve had eaten the fruit of The Tree of Life, then you and your children would have been in Paradise. Wouldn’t that have been wonderful? But, it didn’t happen. In God’s Marriage, both the male and female are of each other – one flesh. Because they both are one flesh, and not two, they have God’s love, “agapè,” where both are concerned for each other’s welfare and good. Satan’s marriage (“Baal’s”), looks upon the woman as a sex object, a slave, and the man’s property.

SECOND COVENANT

The First Covenant was given to Adam and Eve. The Second Covenant

was The Promise of The Seed. Genesis 3:15 is The Promise of Christ redeeming Adam and Eve's children from Satan. In this Covenant (which is a different contract), you have Abraham, who was a Faithful and Righteous man because he believed God. This is God's Second Covenant, which had A Promise about Christ, The Seed. It did not require any other condition.

The promise was made to Abraham because of Abraham's willing sacrifice of Isaac. Abraham already met the requirement (his willingness to sacrifice Isaac), so this Covenant of Abraham became A Promise – without any added conditions. Circumcision (which was added) would not be necessary when Christ (The Seed) would come.

Hebrews 11:8-18 ⁸By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went. ⁹By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs of him of the same promise: ¹⁰For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God. ¹¹Through faith also Sara herself received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged him faithful who had promised. ¹²Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, so many as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore

innumerable. ¹³These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. ¹⁴For they that say such things declare plainly that they seek a country. ¹⁵And truly, if they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned. ¹⁶But now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a city. ¹⁷By faith Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son, ¹⁸Of whom it was said, That in Isaac shall thy seed be called:

Hebrews 11 is known as The Faith Chapter. But it is truly much more. Many people are so busy trying to find out what FAITH is – that they don't pay attention to what this chapter actually says. When you understand what God plans to accomplish, you will, also, learn the meaning of FAITH. This chapter shows that it was an act of faith (verse 8) for Abraham to go into an unknown land.

Abraham obeyed God and kept His Commandments, and Statutes. And, yet, there was NO LAW. Abraham kept God's Commandments simply because he had FAITH in God. He had "agapè" (God's heart); and when you have "agapè," God has written His Law in your heart (Romans 13:10).

God told Abraham to go to Canaan, and he obeyed: **“...for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went.”**

ABRAHAM IN EDEN?

What if Abraham had been the one in The Garden of Eden instead of Adam? You can be sure that Abraham would have eaten of The Tree of Life. **“⁹By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles.”**

Abraham never lived in a house, but only in tents. He did this along with Isaac and Jacob. This was because the text reports: **“¹⁰For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and makers is God.”** This would be The New Heavens and The New Earth – New Jerusalem.

The example of FAITH continues in the story with Sarah (verse 11) who conceived The Promised child, Isaac. At first, Sarah did not think it was possible, so she laughed. Then the account reports: **“¹²Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead [very old], so many as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable.”**

God was going to make many nations throughout the generations. There was to not only be one nation – but a whole host of nations were to come from the seed of Sarah and Abraham. Yet: **“¹³These all died in faith, not having received the promises.”**

WHY CIRCUMCISION?

This Covenant was made through Circumcision. Why Circumcision? By being Circumcised, this was a sign of being delivered from Satan's system – or Satan's method of reproduction. It was a shadow of humanity being delivered from Satan on The Eighth Day.

The Eighth Day refers to The Eighth Day of The Fall Feast. On that day, Christ reveals "The Release" from Satan. In John 7:38, Christ said: **"If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink."** This symbolizes Christ offering The Holy Spirit to everyone. But, this time it is Circumcision of the heart.

Circumcision was getting rid of the filth from the flesh of Satan's children, so that you could have the right relationship with God. God chose "circumcision" as the sign of The Covenant. From Adam to this point, Satan trapped all of humanity. Now Christ, The Seed, would change that.

Circumcision caused blood, so it was no wonder that Moses' wife said that Moses was a bloody man. Then Christ came, and through His death, His Blood was spilled. From then on, "circumcision" was no longer required. The only requirement was CIRCUMCISION OF THE HEART – OR TRUE REPENTANCE.

THE SOLE REQUIREMENT

With The First Agreement, Adam and Eve's only requirement was to believe, but they never made it into The Rest. With Abraham, it was just

Circumcision, and all who came out of his loins. God said that through Isaac, The Promises would be fulfilled from Isaac and Jacob.

This Seed would come to buy the people back from Satan and his system. These people all died in FAITH not having received The Promises, but: **“...were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.”**

The Abrahamic Promise of The Covenant was made through the process of “circumcision” as a sign. The Promises were still not received in their lifetime. Notice: **“¹⁴For they that say such things declare plainly that they seek a country. ¹⁵And truly, if they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned.”** But they did not return. The reason is made clear: **“¹⁶But now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly....”** At that time they knew there would be a New Heaven and a New Earth, sometime, in the future.

This is certain because the text reports that God: **“...hath prepared for them a city. ¹⁷By faith Abraham...offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son....”**

The Promise would be realized through Isaac – and specifically through The Tribe of Judah. In this Covenant, there were Promises that were different from the later Promises of The New Covenant. So, this Second Covenant was totally based on FAITH – which became a Promise (Galatians 3:17).

As a young adult, Isaac was willing to be offered. The Second Covenant had no more requirements, but became “A Promise” – An Inheritance. In fact, this Covenant doesn't have an immediate payoff – since it will not be received until The New Heaven and New Earth arrive. This is when The Kingdom of God comes to earth as shown in Hebrews 11:13-16.

Hebrews 4:4-7 ⁴For he spake in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh day from all his works. ⁵And in this place again, If they shall enter into my rest. ⁶Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached entered not in because of unbelief: ⁷Again, he limiteth a certain day, saying in David, To day, after so long a time; as it is said, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts.

THIRD COVENANT

The Covenant, made with Moses, is The Third Covenant made with a nation. The reference to The Seventh Day is a reflection of The Garden of Eden: **“⁴And God did rest the seventh day from all his works.** This is paralleled with: **“...enter into my rest. ⁶Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached entered not in because of unbelief [no faith]. ⁷Again, he limiteth a certain day [or time], saying in David, To day, after so long a time; as it is said, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts.”** Through David, The Promises were going to be fulfilled so they could

enter into The Rest. That is what they were not allowed to enter after the wilderness trek.

Deuteronomy 5:1-6 ¹And Moses called all Israel, and said unto them, Hear, O Israel, the statutes and judgments which I speak in your ears this day, that ye may learn them, and keep, and do them. ²The Lord our God made a covenant with us in Horeb. ³The Lord made not this covenant with our fathers, but with us, even us, who are all of us here alive this day. ⁴The Lord talked with you face to face in the mount out of the midst of the fire. ⁵(I stood between the Lord and you at that time, to shew you the word of the Lord: for ye were afraid by reason of the fire, and went not up into the mount;) saying, ⁶I am the Lord thy God, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage.

ELDERLY MOSES

The Third Covenant comes at the time when Moses is becoming quite elderly. Deuteronomy is a book of “the re-writing” of The Covenant. This is The Third Covenant – but it is based on The Second One. Exodus was the actual history of the occurrence. At the end of Deuteronomy, Moses dies. Probably Joshua completed the last chapter of Deuteronomy.

So, Moses was talking to the children of Israel about what they were promised in The Third (old) Covenant. “¹**And Moses called all Israel,**

and said unto them, Hear, O Israel, the statutes and judgments which I speak in your ears this day....” Moses called the people to attention in order to hear about: **“²The Lord our God made a covenant with us in Horeb.”** This was at Mount Sinai in Exodus 19 and 20. Moses said: **“³The Lord made not this covenant with our fathers...”** This is not The Covenant that was made with Abraham.

This is a different Covenant with a different Purpose and result. True, it was based on The Abrahamic Covenant – but it is different nonetheless. God was making this Covenant, but something else had to be done.

A MIGHTY DISPLAY

God gave Israel a mighty display to reinforce the seriousness of what was transpiring: **“⁴The Lord talked with you face to face in the mount out of the midst of the fire. ⁵(I stood between the Lord and you at that time, to shew you the word of the Lord: for ye were afraid by reason of the fire...”** God is a consuming fire (Hebrews 12:29), so He did not show Himself. If He had, then Moses would have been burned to a crisp.

In Acts 7, this powerful figure is identified as being an angel representing God: **“for ye were afraid by reason of the fire, and went not up into the mount;) saying, ⁶I am the Lord thy God,...”** Then comes The Ten Commandments.

Deuteronomy 5:22-27 ²²These words the Lord spake unto all your assembly in the mount out of the midst of the fire, of the cloud, and of the thick darkness, with a

great voice: and he added no more. And he wrote them in two tables of stone, and delivered them unto me. ²³And it came to pass, when he heard the voice out of the midst of the darkness, (for the mountain did burn with fire,) that ye came near unto me, even all the heads of your tribes, and your elders; ²⁴And ye said, Behold, the Lord our God hath shewed us his glory and his greatness, and we have heard his voice out of the midst of the fire: we have seen this day that God doth talk with man, and he liveth. ²⁵Now therefore why should we die? for this great fire will consume us: if we hear the voice of the Lord our God any more, then we shall die. ²⁶For who is there of all flesh, that hath heard the voice of the living God speaking out of the midst of the fire, as we have, and lived? ²⁷Go thou near, and hear all that the Lord our God shall say: and speak thou unto us all that the Lord our God shall speak unto thee; and we will hear it, and do it.

These are the very words, which God spoke (verse 22). The Ten Commandments were written on two tables of stone and then delivered to the assembly. The Ten Commandments were all they were to receive – because the text says: “...and he added no more.”

MOSES TAKES DICTATION

Later, God told Moses to write everything in a book. Moses went up a

second time after he had broken the previous tablets, and was told: **“Write down all the words I give you in a book.”** Moses had to write down all The Judgments, Statutes, Washings, Meal Offerings, Sacrifices, Holy Days, New Moons, Sabbaths, and the entire Law (known as The Law of Moses).

The Law of Moses gave the conditions imposed by The Old Covenant. This Third Covenant was not like the other Covenants, which had certain promises made with Abraham. The Abrahamic Covenant was a promise. It did not have conditions like The Covenant with Moses.

Deuteronomy 5:32-33 ³²**Ye shall observe to do therefore as the Lord your God hath commanded you: ye shall not turn aside to the right hand or to the left.** ³³**Ye shall walk in all the ways which the Lord your God hath commanded you, that ye may live, and that it may be well with you, and that ye may prolong your days in the land which ye shall possess.**

What did this Covenant do? It instructed the people not to deviate from the course that had been set. How much of the instruction were they required to follow? The answer is: ALL OF IT. They could not turn to the left or to the right.

Action had to be along the line of exactly what God had said. Notice: **“³³Ye shall walk in all the ways which the Lord your God hath commanded you...that ye may prolong your days in the land....”** So this Covenant was intended to deliver long life, prosperity, abundance, and

physical blessings. But there was NO SALVATION. During this time, God was known as YHWH (JHVH). His Name denotes HE WAS GOOD, MERCIFUL, RIGHTEOUS, JUST, AND MOST HOLY.

Deuteronomy 30:19 I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live:

God made this same offer to Adam and Eve in the beginning, except the rules were different for a very good reason. In the case of Adam and Eve, God told them what was “right” and what was “wrong.” The only decision they had to make was which they would choose. In Deuteronomy 30:19, God signed An Agreement with Moses: **“I call heaven and earth to record this day against you...”** What did this Covenant contain? It was between **“...life and death.”**

MAKING THE RIGHT CHOICE

This is the same choice that Adam and Eve had – life and death. They were offered The Tree of Life – or The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. The same options were made available in The Agreement with Moses – but additional stipulations were added, which are: **“...blessing and cursing...”** This Agreement had a blessing but, also, a curse. To keep any part of The Law of Moses, you had to keep all of The Law. A person could not miss one part of it, because if they did, they would receive the death penalty or curse.

If, you, as a Christian, think you must keep The Law of Moses today, then you must keep it all – every part (Galatians 3:10). If not, then you are cursed. What does The Bible mean when it says, “you are not under The Law”? Worldly religious groups contend that The Law means you are under the penalty (or their policy of belief). However, in The Scripture, you will find it means to not be under The Law. And it has nothing to do with a penalty.

To be under the penalty means you are under a curse. This Covenant had two important parts: (1) one part was life and blessing, while (2) the other part was death and cursing. To be under the curse means to be under the penalty. This Covenant was a blessing for “life.” God told Adam and Eve that there was a Tree of Life in The Garden of Eden – or a curse of “death.”

Hebrews 8:1-5 ¹Now of the things which we have spoken this is the sum: We have such a high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens; ²A minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man. ³For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer. ⁴For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that there are priests that offer gifts according to the law: ⁵Who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the

tabernacle: for, See, saith he, that thou make all things according to the pattern shewed to thee in the mount.

When you study The Bible, and understand the significance of this Old Covenant Law, you must not study only selected pieces. You must study it all. All of the small and large pieces of the puzzle must fit together. You must look at Scriptures you agree with – as well as The Scriptures with which you do not agree. You must allow The Scriptures to open your eyes to new TRUTHS. This is a process that takes time, prayer and much study.

PRIESTHOOD COMPARISONS

Paul explains the basic difference between The Priesthood of Melchisedek and The Priesthood of Aaron – which concerns The Levites. Everything relates to The New Covenant and The Old Covenant: **“¹Now of the things which we have spoken this is the sum: We have such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens; ²A minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle...”** The theme is presented this way because The Old Tabernacle and The Old Covenant were not real in the sense of being the primary intent of GOD’S PLAN.

They were symbolic, and only spoke of Christ (John 5:46). They were a type of The True Tabernacle in Heaven: **“...which the Lord pitched, and not man. ³For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer. ⁴For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest,”**

So, if Jesus would have been on earth at the time of The Epistle of Hebrews, then He would not have fulfilled the role of Melchisedek. He could only be Melchisedek in Heaven, on the right hand of God, The Father. In fact, Paul said that if Christ were on earth, He could not have been Melchisedek: **“...seeing that they are priests that offer gifts according to the law [The Old Covenant]. ⁵Who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things...”**

The entire Old Covenant includes The Law of Moses. Everything they did was only a shadow (picture) of the future (real) heaven or Kingdom. The Old Covenant that was made with Moses and the children of Israel was not real. The Old Covenant with The Law of Moses was just a shadow. The whole Law pointed to Christ (Hebrews 10:1).

John 5:39-47 ³⁹Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. ⁴⁰And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life. ⁴¹I receive not honour from men. ⁴²But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you. ⁴³I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. ⁴⁴How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only? ⁴⁵Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust. ⁴⁶For had ye believed Moses, ye would

have believed me: for he wrote of me. ⁴⁷But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?

SEARCH THE SCRIPTURES

These are the words from your Savior. He said: **“³⁹Search the scriptures;...”** The only Scriptures that were available at this time were in The Old Testament. Why should anyone search? The answer is: **“...for in them ye think ye have eternal life....”**

The whole argument between The Pharisees and The Sadducees was that The Sadducees did not believe in a resurrection – while The Pharisees did. The Sadducees did not understand there would ever be a Resurrection, and The Pharisees believed there would, indeed, be a Resurrection. They kept waiting for The Promised Seed.

Scholars and Christians get into arguments because they do not understand the difference between The Old and New Covenants. The controversy about whether you are required to keep The Law of Moses only proves that these combatants still do not have the complete information. The Scriptures say: **“³⁹...are they which testify of me. ⁴⁰And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.”**

The only way you can obtain life is through Christ or The New Covenant. The New Covenant is real. It writes God’s Law in your heart – because it is not just a shadow. The Purpose of The Old Covenant with The Law of Moses was to bring them to Christ (Galatians 3:24). You cannot obtain Everlasting Life under The Old Covenant.

You can keep The Old Covenant with The Law of Moses till The Kingdom comes – and still you would never obtain LIFE. Jesus said: **“⁴¹I receive not honour from men. ⁴²But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you.”** [You do not have God's “agapè” love in you.] **“⁴³I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. ⁴⁴How can ye believe...”** Some say, “Well, what that Scripture really means is....” Then they give their opinion. When you hear this, all sorts of bells, whistles, and red lights should go off in your mind – to warn you.

COMING IN WHOSE NAME?

Jesus went on to explain about those who come in the name of a greater authority. He said: **“⁴³I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive.”** [He wanted to know the basis for their actions.] **“⁴⁴How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only? ⁴⁵...there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust.”**

This was The Purpose of The Law. The first step is to REPENT. Then the NEXT step, which is through Christ, is for The Law to be written in YOUR HEARTS (Hebrews 8:10). Jesus told the religious leaders: **“⁴⁶For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for he wrote of me. ⁴⁷But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?”** The Old Covenant was a shadow of Christ. Christ in you, writes

God's Law in your heart. You cannot please God or be SAVED by The Law of Moses (The Letter). This Law only brings you to Christ.

Hebrews 8:5-11 ⁵Who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the tabernacle: for, See, saith he, that thou make all things according to the pattern shewed to thee in the mount. ⁶But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises. ⁷For if that first covenant had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second. ⁸For finding fault with them, he saith, Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah: ⁹Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; because they continued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord. ¹⁰For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts; and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people: ¹¹And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know

the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

The Old Covenant and The Law pointed to Christ, as stated: “**...and shadow of heavenly things...**” [Moses was instructed to build everything according to the pattern that was set down in the heavens. This was the basis for Christ, who:] “**...hath he obtained a more excellent ministry** [a better ministry than Moses], **by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant...**”

ANGEL OF THE LORD

In Deuteronomy 5, God spoke to all the people through an angel, saying that this Covenant in Mount Horeb (between Israel and God) was not the same Covenant that He made with Abraham and Isaac. The evidence is: “**⁷For if that first covenant had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second.**”

If The Law of Moses kept you from sinning, made you righteous, and made you perfect – then why would you need any other Covenant? The answer is: “**⁸...finding fault with them....**” [What is this fault? The answer is:] “**Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah:**”

What is The New Covenant? It is: “**⁹Not according to the covenant, that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; because they continued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.**”

He continues with: ¹⁰**For this is the Covenant....**” [This is taken right out of Jeremiah 31:31-34. The passage is talking about The New Covenant with The Church:] ¹⁰**For this is the covenant...I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people.”**

This is the vital change in the old procedure. It will bring about the condition where it is written: ¹¹**And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.**” It is God’s Holy Spirit in each human, to help them to know good from evil.

CHANGING HUMAN NATURE

What will make the people different? They will know Him because they will have His Law written in their hearts. The Letter (physical Law) of Moses (II Corinthians 3:1-3), which can only bring you to Christ and repentance, is no longer required. This Covenant ended in 70 A.D. when The Temple was destroyed.

The Law of Moses was only “added” till Christ came (Galatians 3:19). How plain could The Scriptures be? Once Jesus came, The Law that was given to Moses was simply no longer required! You just need to repent when God calls you. God only intended The Law of Moses for unrepentant people (I Timothy 1:9).

In Hebrew, the word “beryth” means “covenant” (Deuteronomy 5). So “beryth” means literally in Hebrew “to cut in half” or “to choose.” It is

An Agreement or Covenant of choice – which is choosing one or the other: of life or death, of blessing or cursing. God's Agreements and Promises are based upon you choosing LIFE.

The New Covenant is where you learn that God writes His Laws in your hearts and minds. "Covenant" in the Greek means "terms of the agreement" as in a WILL, AN INHERITANCE, OR GIFT. THE NEW COVENANT IS A PROMISE. It does not have a condition as The Law of Moses. There are no other conditions, requirements, or choosing – but only FAITH and REPENTANCE.

Some say you must be in The Letter and in The Spirit. Wrong! One is nothing more than a GIFT through INHERITANCE. You inherited that right. The other (The Old Covenant) requires you choose between two things. The Old Covenant is for your choosing. You cannot have A CHOICE and, in addition, THE FREE GIFT OF INHERITANCE. You must have one or the other. It is an impossibility to do both.

You cannot do The Letter (Choose) and The Spirit (Promise). You cannot 1.) choose and 2.) inherit. It is one or the other. You cannot do Works to obtain a reward, and still consider it being a Gift. So far, The First Covenant was a matter of choice between The Tree of Life or The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. This Covenant was based purely on FAITH, with no other conditions.

ABRAHAMIC COVENANT

The Second Covenant is The Abrahamic Covenant, on which The Old and

New Covenants are based. It was based totally on FAITH, and because Abraham was the father of the Faithful, and it was counted to him as Righteousness.

With The Abrahamic Covenant, there were no requirements of The Law of Moses, and yet Abraham kept The Commandments and The Statutes and The Law – because of his FAITH (Romans 2:15). Then The Law of Moses is a choice law, of blessings and cursings. It literally means “to cut us under the flesh” (a division).

You either get the blessings or you get a cursing. It is one or the other. You must keep all The Laws, so as not to be cursed. What was wrong with The First Covenant in Hebrews? The fault was with the people. So, God as YHWH (JHVH), as THE MERCIFUL, GOOD, RIGHTEOUS, JUST, AND HOLY GOD, gave a Law to a people who were flawed. They were unrepentant, hard-hearted, and stubborn.

The Law of Moses was made for disobedient people (I Timothy 1:9). The Law was not in force for those who were repentant or The Righteous through Christ. The stubborn people were given a choice just as Adam and Eve. They just did not make the right choice.

I Timothy 1:3-9 ³As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus, when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some that they teach no other doctrine, ⁴Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather than godly edifying which is in faith: so do. ⁵Now the end of the

commandment is charity out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned: ⁶From which some having swerved have turned aside unto vain jangling; ⁷Desiring to be teachers of the law; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm. ⁸But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully; ⁹Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,

Paul was warning the brethren not to engage in this kind of dangerous action: **³As I besought thee...that thou mightest charge some that they teach no other doctrine, ⁴Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies [saying you are the children of Abraham], which minister questions, Rather than godly edifying which is in faith: so do.”** When you have The Truth, it fits together beautifully. When you don't have The Truth, you have one question after another – forever and ever – and never with any VALID ANSWERS.

WRITTEN IN THE HEART

You keep The Commandments because they are written in your hearts. Christians must keep The Commandments better than they kept The Law given to Moses (Matthew 5:20, 6:33): **⁵Now the end [goal] of the**

commandment is charity out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned....”

It takes FAITH. It takes an honesty in your being, and The Purpose of The Commandments is to bring you to AGAPÈ. Only then are you fulfilling The Law (Romans 13:10). It is not “eros” love. It is not “philia” love, and it is not a matter of emotion. But, it is AGAPÈ LOVE.

Some church groups insist that you must keep The Law of Moses – or at least certain parts of it. How do you decide which part to keep? They say some parts point to Christ. Wrong. IT ALL POINTS TO CHRIST. Even The Commandments point to Christ – because the goal of The Commandments (as a whole) is AGAPÈ. God is love. Christ is love. It all points to Christ.

If you must keep The Law of Moses, which parts do you keep? The answer is “all parts.” If you don’t keep all of The Laws, then you come under the curse. **“⁶...From which some having swerved have turned aside unto vain jangling [what kind of jangling?]; ⁷Desiring to be teachers of the law; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm.”** [If you are not under The Law, you don’t have to teach it, do you? He tells you how to use The Law:] **“⁸But we know that the law is good.”**

Of course, The Law is good. The Law of Moses gave everyone a choice of Life or death. It was a stepping-stone to Repentance to get to Christ. The Tree of Life and The Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil were

different choices. “⁸...we know the law is good, if a man [what?] use it lawfully....” That means you should use The Law the way God intended.

LAW WRITTEN FOR WHOM?

How did God intend The Law to be used? Please underline verse 9 and perhaps, you should memorize it: “⁹**Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man.**” The Law is not made for a Christian with God's Spirit. Your sins were covered by the blood of Christ and His Righteousness. Now, how do you use it lawfully?

Here is the answer: “**The law is not made for a righteous man but for the lawless and disobedient.**” Does that sound like it is important for Christians? Rather it says: “**...for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and....**”

For whom did God make The Law? It was and is only for unconverted people. That is The Sole Purpose according to God. That is why they were given A CHOICE. The Law was made to CONTROL THE UNGODLY. The Law was filled with works or religious acts that were a burden. Humans do not naturally (inherently) know “right” from “wrong.”

God said: “**Oh if there were such a heart in them.**” This concerns Repentance. God pleaded with them to REPENT. Galatians 3:23-24 states: “**...to be under the Law is to be under a schoolmaster.**” They had not grown to the point of True Repentance. Real Repentance is the condition of your mind and heart into which God can write His Laws.

II Corinthians 3:1-6 ¹Do we begin again to commend ourselves? or need we, as some others, epistles of commendation to you, or letters of commendation from you? ²Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men: ³Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart. ⁴And such trust have we through Christ to Godward: ⁵Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves; but our sufficiency is of God; ⁶Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.

Regarding this matter of commendations, does this mean that churches are to be incorporated? This idea sounds as though it was being written for today's religious organizations. Rather, Paul states: "**2Ye are our epistle written in our hearts.**" What is The New Covenant? God writes His Laws in your hearts and your minds. That is how Christians are: "**known and read of all men:**"

A CHANGE OF NATURE

Christians must have a change of nature (Romans 2:14-15). You don't belong to a specific Church group. You don't have a specific name isolated and incorporated that you belong to: "**3Forasmuch as ye are**

manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us written not with ink [not the letter], **but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone [no Law of Moses], but in fleshy tables of the heart."**

God writes His Laws in your hearts.

Can you see Him writing all The Laws about "Meats" and "Drinks," about The Holy Days, Lists of Unleavened Bread, and on and on? How could it be written in your hearts? Can you see God writing Christmas and Easter in your hearts? No, The Laws He is writing in your hearts are far more Righteous – and far more demanding than The Law of Moses could ever have been.

That which was given to Moses as a Covenant in The Old Testament was specifically for carnal, unconverted people. The Law is Holy, Just, and Righteous – to bring people to Christ. **"⁴And such trust have we through Christ to God-ward: ⁵Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves; but our sufficiency is of God;..."**

In other words, as a Christian, you must be humble and always open to learn Truths as they are revealed in your Bible. You must always be teachable, and want to know if you are wrong. You repent when you are wrong, since your desire is to change and grow Spiritually. You never act as if you have all The Truth: **"⁶Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament...."**

Nothing is clearer. You cannot be in The Letter of the Law because The Letter of The Law KILLS. The Spirit gives LIFE, but if you don't keep the whole of The Law in every detail, then you will be cursed. Since all

have sinned and come short of The Glory of God, everyone would be dead.

Study Romans 5 through 8 – as Paul explains that which was supposed to be good for him (speaking of The Law) only brought death. The Purpose of The Law, according to Romans 5:20, is to make you understand how bad you really are. That is it. And that is why when people offered sacrifices, they offered animal sacrifices.

WHY ANIMAL SACRIFICES?

Did you ever wonder why they offered animal sacrifices? It is because they were carnal, just as an animal or a devouring beast. It was their acknowledgement that they were sinners (as happened with the Azazel Goat when they put their hands on him and released him into the wilderness).

This goat was a type of Satan who will be chained for 1000 years – because of his beastlike carnality. Until The Seed came who paid The Sacrifice for your sins, it only continued to show that you were sinning. Remember, the priests could never give an offering that could make them perfect (Hebrews 8, 9:9, 10:1). It was a reminder that they were, also, sinners. That was The Purpose of The Law.

In Philippians 3:6, The Apostle Paul said he kept The Law blamelessly. Paul kept THE WHOLE LAW. That doesn't mean that he kept it perfectly, but he kept it. Every time Paul did something wrong, he had to do a "work" of The Law because he was under The Law. Paul sacrificed –

or gave a meal offering – or a washing – or put leavened bread (during the feast) out of his house.

At that time, Paul was under the schoolmaster. If he touched a dead animal, then he stayed out of the camp until evening. Under The Law, they were all in bondage, which was a reminder that they were sinners – and needed Christ. Israel did not understand this.

Some worldly churches say that you are not under The Law. They believe they only have to have love. This is not “agapè,” of course, because they don't know “agapè” – or God's love. They only know “eros,” so they have gone from The Law that was supposed to bring them to Christ, and returned to Satan with “eros” or passion (emotion). They show themselves to still be Satan's children. They wail and roll on the floor, and some even cry. They think it is all right to sin because they are now in The New Covenant of love (“Eros”).

The only way anyone can receive “agapè” is to obtain God's Spirit within you. God is life, and, unless, you obtain God's love (which is a moral and an intellectual love), then you do not have God's Law in your heart and mind. You establish The Law because you have it written in your hearts – and your minds, through “agapè.” God's nature (heart) through Christ makes you hate sin because it is against “agapè” to sin. You do not need a written Law to tell you what sin is!

MINISTRATION OF DEATH

II Corinthians 3:7 But if the ministration of death,

written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which glory was to be done away:

“⁷**But if the ministration of death** [death is what Paul calls The Old Covenant] **written and engraven in stones, was glorious...**” Even The Ten Commandments are a shadow. How are they a shadow? Well, if you keep the first five – then that equals loving God. If you keep the last five, that equals loving your neighbor. Therefore, you enter God’s Rest, which is The 4th Commandment.

That is The Whole Purpose of The Ten Commandments. That is what they foreshadow (having God’s Law written in your heart). The goal of The Ten Commandments is love, but it does not give you “agapè.” “⁷**But if the ministration of death, written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which glory was to be** [what was to happen?] **done away:**” Focus upon those words “done away.” According to Paul, The Old Covenant, which includes The Law of Moses, does not pertain to Christians. Do you believe Paul and God’s Scriptures?

When you read The Books of Romans, Galatians, and Hebrews about “under The Law,” it means “under the schoolmaster.” That was The Purpose of The Law. There are only ten places that mention “being under The Law.” Read what it really means:

Galatians 3:19-20 ¹⁹**Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. ²⁰Now a mediator is not a mediator of one, but God is one. ²¹Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life verily righteousness should have been by the law. ²²But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.**

To be under The Law is explained: **“¹⁹Wherefore then serveth the law?”** Why do you serve it? The word “serve” in the Greek is not in The Bible. If you look at Strong's Concordance and look up the word “serve,” in Galatians 3:19, it is blank. It is not there. It should read: **“Wherefore then the Law?”** In other words, why The Law? That is an accurate translation because the word “serve” is not there.

PURPOSE OF THE LAW

“What was The Purpose of The Law?” In The King James, the text says: **“¹⁹Wherefore then serveth the law?”** In other words, why bother keeping it? Or, a better translation is: **“What purpose then has the Law.”** No Scripture can make it clearer for The Purpose of The Old Covenant and The Law of Moses. **“...It was added [why?] because of transgressions.”** For how long: **“...till the seed should come.”**

So, it will last only until The Seed (Christ) should come. It cannot last beyond that time if you have repented: **“...to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator....”** [To use it lawfully, it is only for the ungodly, unconverted, and rebellious people. Any of you who think you must keep The Law of Moses, must be rebellious and unconverted. This instruction also includes The Ten Commandments – because it says:] **“...written on tables of stone....”**

The Commandments are all a shadow. The Commandments were given to bring you to Christ. Christ says, “You think you have eternal life in The Old Testament? The Law speaks about Christ as the reality.” So The Law was only added because of transgressions until Christ should come: **“¹⁹to whom the promise was made; ²¹Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life verily righteousness should have been by the law.”** [If they would have chosen to keep all The Law, it would work. But human nature doesn’t allow you to do this. And they would have had to keep it all perfectly:] **“²²...the scripture hath concluded, all under sin.”**

No one can keep The Law perfectly. Only Christ did. It is an impossibility to keep The Law perfectly, so why keep any of its works? What part do you keep? You cannot keep a part of The Law. You must have Christ in you (Colossians 1:27), so that God will write His Law into your hearts.

CURSE OF THE LAW

Galatians 3:10 For as many as are of the works of the

law are under the curse: for it is written. Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.

Here is the only way you are under the penalty. Under The Law does not mean under the penalty. Being under the curse means being under the penalty. This is why The Galatians were confused about these matters.

Galatians 3:21-29 ²¹Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life verily righteousness should have been by the law. ²²But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe. ²³But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed. ²⁴Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. ²⁵But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster. ²⁶For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. ²⁷For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. ²⁸There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. ²⁹And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.

Is The Law, then, against The Promises of God? Paul said: “**God forbid.**” He explains why Righteousness cannot come by means of The Law. No one could keep it all, so everyone is under the curse by finding out that sin is a transgression of The Law.

The Law tells you what sin is: “...**that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that [what?] believe.**” [It is a matter of faith:] “²³**But before faith came, we were kept [where?] under the law.**” [Now, find out what under The Law means:] “...**shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed.** ²⁴**Wherefore the law was our [what?] schoolmaster.**”

So, to be under The Law is to be under the tutor or teachers. Under The Law never means under the penalty. Under The Law means under the schoolmaster or tutor. To be under the penalty, you are under the curse: “²⁴**Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ [so you could repent], **that we might be justified by faith.**” Once the Law brings you to Christ that is how far The Law is supposed to go until The Seed should come. It ends there.**

THE SCHOOLMASTER

The Law is Good, Just, and Holy to whom? It is to the unconverted, the unrighteous, and the ungodly. Once you repent and believe, you no longer are under that schoolmaster. Nor are you under the curse – because Christ became that curse for you: “²⁵**But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.**”

There is your definition which is Biblically plain: **“²⁶For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. ²⁷For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have [what?] put on Christ. ²⁸There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus. ²⁹And if ye be Christ's, then are ye” [what?] Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise.”** This Promise was never made to Moses.

Galatians 4:1-5 ¹Now I say, That the heir, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all; ²But is under tutors and governors until the time appointed of the father. ³Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world: ⁴But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, ⁵To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

When Christ came, the need for the schoolmaster ended. Being under The Law was over. That is the reason The Temple was destroyed. Christians are now The Temple of God: **“³...Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements....”** [This is about human efforts and traditions that are] **“...of the world....”**

But this is not all because: **“⁴But when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law.”** The woman was not made under the penalty of The Law, was she? No, she was made under the schoolmaster or governor. Why was this

done? It was: “⁵...**To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.**” This is to become Sons of God. These people are bought back from being under the schoolmaster.

It is getting simpler, now isn't it? But do not be too concerned that Christianity is getting too simple to understand – now that you know where the pieces of the puzzle fit together.

Galatians 6:1-2 ¹Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted. ²Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfill the law of Christ.

What Laws are Christians to keep? You had better be careful when trying to help somebody who has not been called or ready to be Saved. You should: “²**Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfill the law of Christ.**” That is The Law Christians are under.

**Romans 13:10 Love worketh no ill to his neighbour:
therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.**

Christ said that all The Law must be fulfilled (Matthew 5:18). Paul clearly states The Law is fulfilled when you, as a Christian, finally have God's AGAPÉ LOVE.

In Romans 13:10, it shows that Christ is cleansing you. He is making you blameless, and Holy. He is making you Perfect. How? It is by making you as Christ Himself – and God, The Father. This is The Law you are

under. **YOU ARE UNDER THE LAW OF CHRIST: “¹⁰Love [“Agapè”] worketh no ill to his neighbour: therefore love [“Agapè”] is the fulfilling of the law.”** Always remember “agapè,” not “eros” or “philia.”

FOURTH COVENANT

Now you have The Law of Christ. The Fourth Covenant is a New Covenant that is based on Spiritual Promises, and made for human beings by God. The New Covenant is not just the definition of sin by The Law. The New Covenant has a much higher requirement when God writes His Law in your hearts and minds.

This New Covenant is God's Fourth Agreement or Contract based on a Promise (gift). The New Covenant does not have a choice of Life or death. The New Covenant is a Gift of Inheritance.

I John 5:17 All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not unto death.

“¹⁷**All unrighteousness is sin:**” [What is all unrighteousness?] “**...and there is a sin not unto death.**” Any sin that you commit that is forgiven, is not unto death. Christians have a higher requirement.

Matthew 5:20-24 ²⁰For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven. ²¹Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever

shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: ²²But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. ²³Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; ²⁴Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

What is the definition for a Christian's sins? Is it any type of unrighteousness? The answer is "no." A person must: **"...exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees."** [These are the leaders who followed The Law of Moses. Consequently, following that course means:] **"...ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven."**

Christians are held to a much higher standard as the text clearly indicates. Forgiveness and humility is a great key in all of this. **"²³Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; ²⁴Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother."** This is far beyond The Letter of The Law.

HATRED IS MURDER

So, if you hate your brother, then you are guilty of murder. Study Matthew 5, 6, and 7. You do not have to literally take something from

your brother. You only need to think of stealing. All unrighteousness is sin if you do not have “agapè.” Unless “agapè” is written in your heart, it is unrighteous. The Commandment’s aim is to bring you to “agapè.” The Law is a shadow of “agapè.” It all leads to Christ because Christ is “agapè.” **“God is Love”** (I John 4:8). That is the type of heart you need.

Romans 2:11-16: ¹¹For there is no respect of persons with God. ¹²For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law; ¹³(For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified. ¹⁴For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves: ¹⁵Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another;) ¹⁶In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel.

You do not steal. You do not covet. You do not commit adultery. You do not defame God because you love Him. You “agapè” Him: **“¹⁴For when the Gentiles, which have not the law do by nature the things contained in the law, these, having not the law, are [what?] are a law unto themselves [not the Law of Moses], ¹⁵Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts [by a change of nature], their conscience also**

bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another;) ¹⁶In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel.” How does God write His Law in your hearts, so your nature literally changes?

Hebrews 7:11-12 ¹¹If therefore perfection were by the Levitical priesthood, (for under it the people received the law,) what further need was there that another priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron? ¹²For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law.

Some ministers try to make this a subject of tithing. It is laughable when you try to say Hebrews 7 is about tithing. The subject is: “¹¹**If therefore perfection were by the Levitical priesthood, (for under it the people received the law),...**” This was under The Law of the schoolmaster.

The Law was changed from The Letter to The Spirit. Under Melchisedek, it is a change of nature. It becomes a Law in your heart. It is written in your heart. How? By agapè – and if you have agapè, then you establish The Law, and you are more righteous than The Law – because by nature you cannot do anything but keep The Law in your mind. It would be foreign to your nature not to keep The Law. The thought of sinning would not be a part of your thinking, let alone actually doing anything wrong.

II Peter 1:4-7 ⁴Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these ye might be

partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust. ⁵And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge; ⁶And to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness; ⁷And to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity.

All unrighteousness is sin. But there is no unrighteousness if you have agapè. That is why “agapè” covers a multitude of sins. With “agapè,” you are not going to sin. You only grow Spiritually: “**⁵And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith.**” This is the requirement to get under The New Covenant. REPENT AND BE BAPTIZED (Act 2:38).

GENERATION OF VIPERS

When John, The Baptist came (John 3), he told the people, that your Husband is coming. And he told The Pharisees and The Sadducees: “**Oh you generation of vipers and snakes, why are you here? Repent.**” Repentance is required for this Agreement of The New Covenant that God made with humanity. Peter says: “**⁵add to this your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge;...**” This is a proxy of how a Christian lives, and how God writes His Law in your minds.

As you come to know goodness, and goodness makes you understand knowledge, then knowledge leads you to moderation with no extremism: “**⁶And to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness;...**” [Now you are learning to become like God.]

“⁷And to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity.”

This is The Process of how God writes His Law in your hearts. So, in FAITH, you believe. Christians have received The Earnest of The Inheritance for The New Covenant through God’s Spirit. As you live this human existence, going from FAITH to VIRTUE to KNOWLEDGE to PATIENCE to BROTHERLY KINDNESS, you finally come to AGAPÈ – and then, finally, GOD’S LAW IS WRITTEN IN YOUR HEARTS.

Study The Royal Law in James 2. The Law of Christ is The Royal Law because it is from The King. It is from Christ, Himself, and is Christ in you (Colossians 1:27). These are The Four Covenants. Each has a different Purpose. God lets Himself be known under different titles (names) for His different Plans and Purposes. He is called Father – and all are Heirs and all will become Sons, which is The New Covenant.

You are no longer under the schoolmaster or The Law of Moses. You are now under THE LAW OF CHRIST, which writes God’s Laws in your hearts for a complete change of nature. This is The Fourth Covenant, which is The New Covenant that makes you God’s very Sons, like Christ.

FIFTH AGREEMENT

The Fourteenth Chapter of this book covers God’s Fifth Agreement, which is His Kingdom – when Christ will restore all that was lost in The Garden of Eden. With The Fifth Agreement, God, The Father becomes “all and in all” – by making all things new (Revelation 21:5)!

CHAPTER 10

WHAT WAS ADDED TO THE LAW?

The Apostle Paul said: **“by the works of the law shall no flesh [mankind] be justified”** (Galatians 2:16). In Galatians 2:21, Paul said Christians could not obtain any type of Righteousness by The Law. In Galatians 3:19, Paul said: **“...Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.”**

This Law, which WAS ADDED, was extremely important because it was, only, to be in force UNTIL The Promised Seed (Christ: Galatians 3:17) should come.

The works of human effort (Greek “ergon,” or “labor”) can never make an individual right – nor can it justify anyone in God’s sight (Galatians 3:3). The Law could have given righteousness, but it did not accomplish that, because all have sinned (Galatians 3:21-22). Paul clearly stated that this

Law was the schoolmaster, which was only employed, as homework, to eventually and finally bring a person to Christ. When you become a Christian, you are no longer under this schoolmaster, which was The Added Law (Galatians 3:24-25). What exactly was this Added Law?

THREE LAWS

In determining which Law was “added,” there are only three choices: (1) The Torah, consisting of The First Five Books of The Old Testament, which includes The Law of Moses (with The Commandments, Statutes and Judgments), (2) The Talmud, or The Oral Law, and finally (3) The Law of Moses – Commandments, Statutes and Judgments.

THE TORAH

The Torah is the written Law by Moses, which comprises The First Five Books of The Old Testament. A copy of this Law was to be placed on the side of The Mercy Seat of The Ark in The Temple (Deuteronomy 31:26). Only the two tables of stone (which had The Ten Commandments) were placed inside The Mercy Seat (Exodus 25:16). There is a great significance in having only The Ten Commandments reside within The Ark of The Covenant.

In Hebrews 10:1, The Apostle Paul states “THE PURPOSE” of The Torah.

“For the law having a shadow of good things to come

[Christ], and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect.”

The Law (Hebrew “Torah,” and Greek “Nomos”) is composed of The First Five Books of The Bible (Pentateuch). It was intended only to depict (be a reminder) of what was to come. Also, the sacrifices were only a shadow of things to come. Paul mentions the sacrifices separately from The Torah. This is because sacrifices had started before the written Torah or The Law. Sacrificing actually began with “righteous” Abel.

What exactly did The Torah and the sacrifices foreshadow? In John 5:39, Jesus said that The Pharisees believed they could obtain eternal life from following The Scriptures. Christ said: **“They [scriptures] are they which testify of me.”** The Law and the sacrifices were designed to foretell Christ, who Himself is The Sacrificed Lamb. This was “THE MESSAGE” from the foundation of the world.

Almost 4,000 years of continual ritual sacrifices took place until Christ came – and was “the final sacrifice” for all mankind. The Torah and the sacrifices foretell Christ, “The Messiah.” This reveals “the true purpose” of The Law or Torah.

THE ORAL LAW

What was “THE PURPOSE” of The Oral Law? In Matthew 23:1-3, Jesus said The Pharisees (The Sanhedrin) sit in Moses’ seat. Christ said that everything they instruct you to do – that you should do. Why is this? It is

because they sit in Moses' seat. He explained how The Sanhedrin, The Mosaic Court, sat in the position over Israel – just as Moses did.

When did this Oral Law begin? Read all of Exodus 18. This was the authority that Moses passed on to the elders to “**sit in his seat,**” on the smaller matters of The Law. Exodus 18 is the beginning of The Oral – or spoken Law. This helped Moses endure his overwhelming job.

A good example of how The Oral Law was used with The Law of Moses is found in “the process of fasting” on Atonement. The idea of fasting on The Day of Atonement does not come from The Written Law – but from The Oral Law. The Law given from God to Moses does not state anything about not eating or drinking (fasting) on The Day of Atonement.

The Law of Moses declares that The Israelites were supposed to afflict their souls, and not work on Atonement. There is no commandment in The Law to fast on The Day of Atonement (Leviticus 16:29). To “afflict” one’s soul in the Hebrew means to humble oneself (Strong’s 6031, “looking down”). There is no mention of fasting. The entire concept of fasting on Atonement came from The Oral Law of the elders that was recorded in The Talmud. God is against fasting on Atonement because God wants humility and concern for others. Read all of Isaiah 58.

FORESHADOW CHRIST

THE PURPOSE of The Torah was to foreshadow Christ. In addition, The Oral Law was for The Pharisees who sat in Moses’ seat. It was given so

they could settle the smaller questions about God's Law.

What was THE PURPOSE of The Law of Moses and its intent? How did The Law of Moses come about? Paul referred to it as the works or deeds of The Law. This was The Administration of Moses, because following The Letter of The Law by human effort (works) can never change you or anyone else.

Once you perceive THE REAL PURPOSE of each Law, and God's purpose (intent) for each, then The Bible will Scripturally reveal which Law was "added." That Law was only intended to bring you to Christ, and then it was to end (Hebrews 8:13).

Paul declares how this "added" Law (Covenant) was to vanish or cease. When The Temple was destroyed in 70 A.D., The Covenant and The Law of Moses ended. Remember, you cannot keep The Law of Moses without The Temple.

Summarizing:

- 1) The Added Law came 430 years after The Covenant with Abraham. The Abrahamic Covenant was instituted about 1900 to 2000 B.C.E. Four hundred and thirty years later puts this Added Law about 1400 to 1500 B.C.E. That is exactly the time of Moses.
- 2) Paul said The Added Law was the one given at Mt. Sinai. This Law was The Old Covenant, which was to be bondage (Galatians 4:24-25).

- 3) This Added Law was intended as a schoolmaster, which was only to bring a person to Christ (Galatians 3:24). Then, this Law ended (Galatians 3:17).
- 4) The reason this Law was added was because Israel transgressed God's other Laws (Galatians 5:19).
- 5) Finally, if this Law was added, then this Law had to be added to something that existed prior to it.

WHAT WAS THE LAW ADDED TO?

Once a person Biblically proves the history of The Added Law – how it came about – and what its purpose was – then everything becomes crystal clear. Consequently, Galatians will become one of the simplest of Paul's letters to understand. Deuteronomy 5 proves what this Law was “added to,” and Acts 7 details the history.

In Deuteronomy 5, Moses declares how Israel received The Old Covenant and The Law of Moses (Deuteronomy 5:2-21). Moses said that when Israel came to Mt. Horeb in Sinai, God gave them The Old Covenant. In verse 4, you read how God spoke face to face (through an angel) with Moses. Then He spoke, out of the midst of the fire, to Israel. This was before Moses went up into the mount to receive The Ten Commandments, which was written in stone.

GOD SPOKE DIRECTLY

Then God spoke His Word directly to Israel by giving them The Ten Commandments. In Verse 22, God finished giving The Ten Commandments and then Moses said that God “added no more.” Reread this verse, and see that God only spoke The Ten Commandments to them – and added nothing else. Any Law that “was added” after this Biblical statement must be part of The Added Law.

From Verses 23-28, the people said they no longer wanted to hear God directly. They were too afraid, and so they only wanted to hear Moses. No longer did they want direct contact with God. What was God's attitude about their behavior? In Verse 25, God agreed to do it their way. In Verse 29, God said: “**O that there were such an heart in them, that they would fear me, and keep all my commandments always, that it might be well with them, and with their children always.**” This is the essence of The New Covenant – to write His Law in your heart and mind.

Remember that after God directly spoke The Ten Commandments, nothing else, was added. In fact, when Christ comes, God will write His Law in your heart, which will make a change in your human nature (Jeremiah 31:31-33, Romans 2:14-15). What God really wanted from Israel was for them to keep His Commandments in their hearts. He did not want “to add” anything else.

In Matthew 19:16-22, the rich young man asked Jesus what he must do to obtain eternal life. In verse 17, Jesus told him to keep The Commandments. The rich man said that he had kept them from his youth.

He, also, asked what he lacked. Jesus told him to sell what possessions he had, and then give the proceeds to the poor. Then the invitation was to follow Christ. The rich man could not bring himself to do this. So, Christ knew the rich man's heart.

To receive Eternal Life, God wants you to have His Commandments written in your hearts (The New Covenant). This is what God wanted all along from Israel when He gave them The Ten Commandments – and then God “added nothing more.”

In Acts 7:30-39, Stephen gave an account of how God made His Covenant with Abraham – and then told about The Israelite's delivery from Egypt. In Verse 38, Stephen said The Israelites at Mount Sinai heard God give the “**lively oracles.**”

It is extremely important to know what these “**lively oracles**” were. In Verse 39, Stephen said that Israel disobeyed these oracles. This is the transgression specified in Galatians 3:19. Whatever this Law turns out to be, then The Added Law “was added” to something. But to what? Realize that The Ten Commandments, which God wanted written in their hearts, was to be seen as nothing more being added (Deuteronomy 5:22).

THE LIVELY ORACLES

What are these LIVELY ORACLES – and what was The Added Law? As a first step of evidence, you must check the Greek meaning of these two words: “live” and “oracles.” In Strong's Concordance, “to live,”

#2198 is a verb, which is an action meaning “to live” or “make alive.”

Now to the word “oracles,” Strong’s #3051 and #3052 explains it is “an utterance of God” – or “God directly speaking His Words” to Israel. The lively oracles are God’s Words that are “life giving.” These “life giving words” of God were The Ten Commandments – and God “**added no more**” (Deuteronomy 5:22).

In Romans 3:1-2, Paul said: “**What advantage then hath the Jew?**” In verse 2, The Apostle Paul said: “**Much every way: chiefly** [what’s important] **because that unto them** [The Israelites] **were committed the oracles of God.**” Paul said the advantage The Jews had is they received The Ten Commandments, which gave Eternal Life.

In The New Heaven and New Earth, in order to enter New Jerusalem and be able to eat of The Tree of Life, a person must have kept God’s Commandments (Revelation 22:14). God added nothing more. Plainly, and without human interpretation, God Himself said that He only wants His Ten Commandments written in your hearts – and so God ADDED NOTHING MORE.

THE ADDED LAW

Let The Bible identify “The Added Law” for you. In Acts 7:39, Stephen said, “**To whom our fathers would not obey.**” This is the transgression that made God give the addition to The Ten Commandments, which God directly spoke to Israel. From this point on, whatever God gave to Moses is The Added Law.

After receiving The Ten Commandments, Stephen said The Israelites told Aaron to make them gods (see: verse 40). Verse 41 reveals how they made the golden calf. They broke God's command by making an idol. Right after God, verbally, gave them The Ten Commandments, they transgressed. So God added The Law that was to be a bondage to them (Galatians 4:24). God gave a Law to them that had blessings and cursings. Stephen explained in Acts 7:42 what God did: **“Then God turned, and gave them up to worship the host of heaven.”**

In Deuteronomy 5, after God gave them The Ten Commandments, The Israelites did not want to hear God directly. God said He wished Israel had a repentant heart. Then, what did God do? Moses went up to God, alone, and received The Added Law. In verse 31, God spoke to Moses in The Mount and gave them The Commandments, Statutes, and Judgments. They had to keep it in its entirety (Galatians 3:10).

If you break one part, you became guilty of breaking every part of it. If one believes you must keep this Added Law, then you must keep it all. A person cannot decide to keep only certain parts – because they “feel” Christ fulfilled part of it. In fact, Christ has fulfilled the whole Law of Moses. You must keep it all, or you are guilty of it all (James 2:10).

That was the reason for the conference in Acts 15 about circumcision and The Added Law. What Law was Added? It was The Law given to Moses after The Israelites sinned by constructing the golden calf. The Law of Moses was “The Added Law.” The Bible plainly proves it!

This Added Law, given to Moses could not “justify” anyone. This Law could not make anyone righteous. It could not make anyone perfect. In Galatians 3:3, Paul asked if a person thought they would be perfect by keeping The Law of Moses. Then Paul tried to tell The Galatians why they had to perform all The Law of Moses in order to be righteous. Of course, this was impossible.

So, that was the reason why Paul said The Law entered (or was added). It was because it was obvious that no one, but Christ, could keep The Law. The Law that “was added” was intended to show you what a sinner you are (Romans 5:20). This was the only reason The Law of Moses “was added” to The Ten Commandments.

WHY THE LAW WAS ADDED?

The Added Law, or The Law of Moses, also included The Oral Law. This was because The Israelites were carnal and unrepentant. It helped Moses to administer The Added Law that God gave him.

In I Timothy 1:7-10, The Apostle Paul said there were those in The Church who desired to be teachers of The Law. There were many converted Jews, and even Pharisees, who were zealous for The Law (Acts 21:20). In verse 7, of I Timothy 1, Paul said that these people did not understand THE PURPOSE of The Law. Remember, this Added Law was a schoolmaster that was only intended to bring them to Christ.

Very clearly, Paul explained why God added The Law of Moses. He began in Verse 9 with: “**Knowing this, that the law is not made for a**

righteous man [once baptized you are righteous through Christ], **but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers”**

The additional Law was added because the people were sinners and unrepentant. The Added Law, The Law of Moses, was included as a burden to bring them to Christ. There is great significance about The Tablets of The Ten Commandments being the only items in The Ark of The Covenant. The only way anyone can receive mercy is by letting God through Christ write The Ten Commandments in their heart.

The reason God wrote The Ten Commandments on stone was to illustrate how they were receiving this “Added Law” of Moses – because of their unrepentant, stone-like hearts. In II Corinthians 3:3, Paul stated that God does not want you to keep The Letter of The Law written in stone (unrepentant) – but in the fleshly tables of your heart. This is Repentance, and one’s heart (desire) becomes loving toward God and His Creation.

The Added Law only remained, in effect, until Christ came. Once Christ came, The Law of Moses completed its “Godly Purpose” of bringing you to Christ. Now, God writes His Law (Ten Commandments), The New Covenant, in your hearts.

DISCERNING VARIOUS LAWS

The difference between The Torah (first five books), The Law of Moses

(Added Law), and The Oral Law (Court of Israel to interpret The Law of Moses) can be explained in the following way:

The Torah (The Law), "Nomas" in the Greek, in its root meaning carries the implication of a "rule" or "standard." In modern English it would mean, "the path." In John 11:25, Jesus said: "**I am the resurrection, and the life; he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live.**" John 5:39 explains "the purpose" of The Scriptures (including The Torah). They were to shadow – or testify of Christ. So Christ is THE PATH (or the life) that The Torah (The Law) foreshadows.

This Torah is called The Path, because it steers you to Christ. The whole Torah reveals The Messiah and how you need Him. This is "The Law," which comprises The First Five Books and their purpose. The Torah, which is Spiritual, Holy, good, and eternal – leads you to Christ. In this account, God deals with the seed of Abraham (children) who were to receive the promise.

Abraham's children (Israel) turned out to be rebellious, and did not want God to talk to them, directly. At this point, all God intended for them was to keep His Ten Commandments in their hearts – and so He added nothing more. At this point, they could have received The New Covenant, but they rejected it by committing sin when they built the golden calf.

At this point, Moses pleaded for their lives. God realized that the way to help them come to Him and The Messiah was The Added Law, which God gave to Moses on Mount Sinai. This Added Law became The Law of

Moses, which included The Ten Commandments written in stone, The Judgments, and The Statutes.

SLAVERY BRINGS A POSITIVE RESULT

This Law under discussion was to place Israel into slavery (bondage) to bring them to Christ. Once The Temple was destroyed by Titus in 70 A.D., that ended this Added Law of Moses. This is because Christ came and wrote God's Ten Commandments in your heart and mind. This was accomplished by a change of your very nature.

This Law of Moses was never intended for repentant people. John, The Baptist would not baptize The Pharisees and Sadducees because they would not repent – or come to Christ. So, The Added Law of Moses was good, right, and holy, because its purpose was to bring them to The Messiah. This Law is not required by Christians because God writes His Ten Commandments in the hearts of true Christians!

The Added Law is The Letter of The Law. Remember, all that God wanted was for Israel to keep The Ten Commandments in their hearts, and God ADDED NOTHING MORE (Deuteronomy 5:22).

However, The Ten Commandments “were added” to the remainder of The Law because – when Moses went up into The Mount, he also received The Ten Commandments IN STONE. The Ten Commandments were not written in their hearts, because they were hard-hearted and unrepentant. The Torah (Law) was what God told Moses to write in The Book. This

Book was placed in the side of The Ark (Exodus 24:7). This Book or Law indicted Israel.

As long as one's heart was like stone, God would not give mercy. The Law was only to bring you to Christ (Hebrews 10:1), and was placed in the side of The Ark. This is The LETTER of The Law – or what was written in The Book or The Torah. The whole Law was written for Israel to keep because they were unrepentant and hard-hearted, and were required to do much homework to finally come to Christ (I Timothy 1:9).

God required Moses to write down what was sin, because they could not tell “right” from “wrong.” They did not have a right heart or God's nature in them to know the difference between good and evil (II Peter 1:4).

CHAPTER 11

THE SPIRIT VS. THE LETTER

Some Christians believe The New Covenant requires The Law to be kept only in The Spirit. Other Christians believe that one must keep The Law in The Letter and The Spirit. Still others believe a person, must love others – only, and not keep any Law. Which is Biblical?

The answer to the above question can be found when a person learns the basic difference between The Old Covenant and The New Covenant. Once this question has been resolved on a Biblical basis, then The Truth of The Bible becomes very clear and obvious to all.

THE OLD COVENANT

In the chapter, “What is The Added Law,” you found that originally the only thing that God required for Salvation – was that Israel keep His Ten Commandments in their hearts (Deuteronomy 5:1-29). Then in Deuteronomy 5:22, Moses declared that God “added no more.” This fulfilled the extent of His requirement. There was nothing more to add.

Jesus validated the same concept to the rich man in Matthew 19, when He showed, in order to have eternal life, one only needed to keep God’s Ten

Commandments in his heart. Finally, in God's Kingdom when The Saved will have a right to The Tree of Life, an individual must keep God's Ten Commandments as well (Revelation 22:14).

Therefore, you find that God added The Law of Moses to The Ten Commandments – which, also, became part of the written Torah (The Law). The book of Galatians declares that “this added law” (Law of Moses) was to last, ONLY, until Christ came.

Also, if one believed they were required to keep The Letter of The Law of Moses, then they were, also, to keep every part of The Added Law of Moses. If one part was transgressed, then a person became guilty of breaking all of them. Then, they came under the penalty – or curse of The Law.

Why did God add The Law of Moses? He added this Law because of transgressions (Acts 7:38-41). Since Israel did not have a converted heart, God spelled out in great detail what He wanted them to do. The Law of Moses was to put them into bondage – or a form of slavery.

This religious system of slavery was to be such bondage, that it would be like a schoolmaster who never gets off your back until you repent – or seek Christ (Galatians 3:24). This Added Law of Moses was weak. This is because human nature could not keep it in its entirety – no matter how hard they tried (Hebrews 8:6-10).

This was why a loving God gave them this “schoolmaster” (Law) so they would repent in their hearts. God's purpose was to have The Law cause a

change of heart. Jesus plainly said this was the job that Moses did in John 5:46. Moses was to bring The Israelites to Christ.

PURPOSE OF THE OLD COVENANT

This Covenant was made for Israel. It was not the same as The Covenant made with Abraham. Moses clearly states in Deuteronomy 5:3 that The Covenant which was made with the fathers (Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob) was different. Paul said in Galatians 3:16-18 that The Covenant with the fathers was based on a promise – and so The Law of Moses (added law) was introduced because of sin (Verse 19).

The Bible interprets itself between these two Covenants. The Abrahamic Covenant was based on a promise because Abraham had been faithful. Therefore, it was counted unto him for righteousness. What made Abraham righteous was his Faith (Hebrews 11). Even though The Law of Moses was not in force for another 430 years (Galatians 3:17), God regarded Abraham as keeping the whole Law. This is because he was considered righteous because of his Faith (Genesis 26:5).

This is just like Christians today who have “Agapè” (God’s law in their heart). They are described by The Apostle Paul as having fulfilled (completed) the entire Law (Romans 13:10). This Covenant made by God through Moses and for Israel had an entirely different reason for its existence.

Galatians 3:19 very clearly states how this “Added Law” of Moses was given because Israel sinned – and had an unrepentant heart (Deuteronomy

5:29). In fact, God wanted to kill them, but Moses intervened and God, instead, gave them The Law of Moses, which was administered by Moses. This administration was known as The Administration of The Letter.

Paul declares that this Covenant, including The Law of Moses and The Ten Commandments, was written on two tables of stone (II Corinthians 3:3). Paul shows how this Law was written on stone (including judgments, ordinances, and statutes) to bring them to death: **“For the letter killeth, but the Spirit gives life”** (II Corinthians 3:6). Paul plainly states “the purpose” of The Added Law of Moses. It was to bring Israel to death. Why is this?

The Law had “many” purposes. The Law told what righteousness was (Philippians 3:6). It also was a shadow (picturing the future) of things to come (Hebrews 10:1-2). It was also to bring you to Christ (Galatians 3:24). You may not have been aware God gave The Law to fulfill His many purposes. It was holy, just, and good – because it was given to make a person to finally realize they could not keep it all. Therefore, they were under its curse – which is death (Galatians 3:10-11). The Law of Moses was to bring a person to repentance.

Here you have The Old Covenant **BIBLICALLY INTERPRETING ITSELF**. Because Israel had a carnal heart, and kept sinning, The Old Covenant was given to make them understand they could not of their own human effort become righteous. That was the only reason God allowed Israel to live.

God gave them The Law to force them to have a change of heart (Romans

5:20). Every time they sinned, The Law of Moses required an array of bondage (Greek: ergon – “works,” “drudgery,” or “deeds”) to perform. Everything in The Added Law of Moses was designed to show how unrepentant and incapable they were in keeping The Law. Every detail of their life was spelled out showing what was “right” and what was “wrong.”

Finally, this Law of Moses was to bring them to Christ by true repentance (Romans 5:20). This Law was truly a schoolmaster to bring them to Christ (Galatians 3:24). As long as they performed all The Law required, they received the blessings of a long life in the land that God had given them. In addition, they also gained prosperity (Deuteronomy 5:33).

FAULT WITH THE LAW?

Many do not realize The Old Covenant (Law of Moses) never promised Eternal Life. Eternal life came through the promise made to Abraham. Why didn't The Law give them Eternal Life? In Hebrews 8:8, Paul said the fault was with them. They had the wrong nature produced by their human flesh – which is a carnal heart. To have Eternal Life, you must have The Ten Commandments written in your heart (Matthew 19).

An unconverted person, on his own, cannot decide “right” from “wrong.” Rebellious Israel had to have every aspect of the process of human living spelled out in detail. That is why The Law covered every part of the human existence. The Law tells you what sin is (I John 3:4). On their own, the people could not discern “good” from “evil.”

The difference between The Gentiles (pagans) and Israel is that The Gentiles did not know God (Romans 1:28). They were helplessly left to their own ideas of “right” and “wrong.” The outcome has produced a Heinz variety of religions, and all of them are wrong.

On the other hand, God spelled out right and wrong for The Israelites in detail – and then Moses wrote it in a book. Otherwise, there was no difference between The Gentiles and The Israelites. Both of them were unrepentant and carnal.

Israel knew God's way, but The Gentiles had no hint of “that way.” However, neither of them was able to be righteous. The Gentiles did not know the difference, and Israel had the wrong heart. In both cases, they sinned (Romans 3:23) – and earned only death.

ENTER THE NEW COVENANT

Now, to examine a better way – which is called: The New Covenant. Some Biblical statements are so obvious, and yet because of previous belief, a person may ignore instruction in The Scriptures that is very plain and straightforward. A person will read a verse, and if it doesn't agree with their understanding, they often read right over it as if it doesn't exist. Then, they are blinded to The Truth.

In Luke 5:36-39, Jesus gave the parable about putting new wine into old bottles (wineskins). It does not work, and the bottle will burst. You must put new wine into new bottles (wineskins). This is because they will stretch with the expansion of the wine as it ferments. Then, in Verse 39,

Jesus made this true Spiritual statement. Christ said: **“No man also having drunk old wine straightway desireth new: for he saith, the old is better.”**

This points to a significant Spiritual lesson. It depicts your understanding of human nature. The old ways always seem better than the new. Christ said new Spiritual Truth is harder to accept, as human beings prefer to keep the old! Traditions can eventually become perceived as the so-called “truth.”

In Hebrews 7:19, Paul said The Law made nothing perfect. It only revealed sin. Then, Paul continued, and said: **“But the bringing in of a better hope did.”** Plain, simple, and clear – The Old Covenant could only tell that you were a sinner – but it could not change a person or make anyone “perfect.”

In Verse 22, Paul said: **“By so much was Jesus made a surety of a better testament.”** In Verse 6, Jesus, as Melchizedek: **“...obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is a mediator of a better covenant....”**

This was established upon better promises. This New Testament changed The Law and its Administration (Hebrews 7:12). This New Covenant was a better way to approach God – because it could make the person perfect.

What happened to The Old Covenant? In Hebrews 8:13, **“In that he saith, A new covenant, he hath made the first old, Now that which**

decayeth and waxeth old is ready to vanish away.” It ends in 70 A.D. at the fall of The Temple. The teaching could not be any clearer. The Covenant under the administration of Moses (Law of Moses) was to vanish away. That is simple and plain.

Remember what Christ said. He revealed that men prefer the old wine – or The Old Covenant. It is hard for humanity to give up old ideas. Once a person thinks they know what is true, and then starts to understand this “new” Truth, it is very difficult to give up those old beliefs.

THE DIFFERENCE

To understand the difference between The Old Covenant and The New Covenant, you must first understand that there is more than one Law. You found in Chapter X, “What is The Added Law,” that there are three Laws.

The first Law, The Torah, which includes the entire First Five Books of The Bible, was basically written to disclose Christ as The Messiah (Hebrews 10:1). Next, the two other laws, The Torah and The Oral Law, are, also, in The Torah – or The First Five Books of The Old Testament.

In Deuteronomy 5, God added a Law to The Torah and The Ten Commandments for a different purpose than the entire Torah. The Torah, in The Greek New Testament, “Nomos,” was to reveal Christ as The Messiah and Savior of the world. The Added Law had a specific limitation to it, as well as, an entirely different purpose than the entire Torah. What was that difference?

In Galatians 3:19, you find this Added Law was incorporated because of sin and it was only to last until Christ came. This Law was a schoolmaster to bring a person to Jesus (Galatians 3:24). This Law “was added” for the benefit of unconverted people (I Timothy 1:9). The Torah was to show the need for The Messiah – and to restore the paradise lost and The Tree of Life (Hebrews 10:1; Matthew 18:11).

The Added Law, which is called The Law of Moses (Commandments, Statutes, and Ordinances) was to bring people to repentance. Later, it was to cease or vanish (Galatians 3:24; Hebrews 8:13). This Law of Moses will be re-instituted when Jesus returns (with The Temple) to bring all unrepentant Israelites (and the unrepentant Gentiles) to Christ during The Millennium. Once everyone is repentant, THIS LAW WILL AGAIN CEASE (Matthew 5:18). From this point on, God’s Law (The Torah) is written in your hearts, or “Christ in you.”

Now, The Third Law is The Oral Law. In Exodus 18, Moses picks out from among the elders of Israel a total of 70 to be a Sanhedrin (court). They were to help him administer the smaller matters of The Law of Moses. This was because of its complexity and workload. Christ said this court existed in Jesus’ Day, and they sat in Moses seat (Matthew 23:1-3).

LAW SPELLED OUT

Remember, The Law of Moses spelled out what was right and what was wrong in God’s eyes. The Israelites were unrepentant and on their own could not discern “right” from “wrong.” God spelled out specifically what Israel was to do. Also, The Gentiles came up with their own ideas for

their religion. When kept in its entirety, this Law of Moses was their righteousness (Deuteronomy 6:25). Now to the difference between The Old and New Covenants.

Keeping The Letter of The Law of Moses by your human effort made you acceptable by God. It allowed you to receive all the blessings in the Promised Land with a long life (Deuteronomy 6). But, Deuteronomy 6:25 states that keeping The Law of Moses by works or human effort only became their righteousness (by their own efforts).

It is the same problem that Job experienced until he repented completely. Remember, Job was the most righteous person during his time (Job 1:8). Yet, Job was not completely repentant until God brought him to that state of mind. Job finally realized that only God can do everything (Job 42:2). Job fully repented when he said: **“Wherefore I abhor myself, and repent in dust and ashes”** (Job 42:6).

The Apostle Paul learned the same lesson (Romans 7:13). In Philippians 3:6, Paul said that he kept the righteousness in The Law blamelessly. Then in Philippians 3:8, Paul said the knowledge of Christ was more excellent – and counted his righteousness in The Law as useless.

Your righteousness, whether self-righteousness or other righteousness, cannot please God (Romans 8:8). Any attempt to be righteous in the flesh (by human works) cannot please God. The best that your righteousness can do is to give you a good life while on this earth. That is The Old Covenant. There is nothing else. The Law of Moses cannot make you

righteous. No man can keep the whole Law, or be justified (perfect & blameless).

The intent of The Law of Moses is to bring you to realize that all are sinners, and everyone needs Christ (Galatians 3:24). God added The Law of Moses to The Ten Commandments because the people needed to come to repentance – just as Job did. Once that happens, a better way was needed. It was a New Covenant that does what The Old Covenant could not do – and that was to give Eternal Life.

THE NEW COVENANT

Paul told The Gentile Christians in Galatians 3:3: **“Are you so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are you now made perfect by the flesh?”**

The Gentiles who repented and accepted Christ, received God’s Holy Spirit without keeping of The Law of Moses. Why do they now believe they must, by human effort, keep “the works” of The Law? Paul said they were foolish if they did so. Why is this?

Christ makes it plain. When Jesus spoke to the Samaritan woman at the well, He said: **“But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth”** (John 4:23-24).

God is not pleased when you worship Him in the letter (by human effort). God said you must only worship Him in The Spirit. If you want to obey God, then you can only worship Him Spiritually. Why is this?

Paul states in II Corinthians 3:3 that if you are in Christ – then you do not need to follow the letter written in stone (Ten Commandments), but only The Law written in your fleshly heart. God wants you to worship Him in The Spirit. If you worship Christ in the letter, by your human efforts, it will bring you death – and not life.

No human can keep the whole Law perfectly – except Christ. By keeping The Old Covenant with The Law of Moses, it will only bring you to death. God warns you to worship Him in The Spirit – because He wants you to have Eternal Life. No one can do anything by himself. Only God can change you. In Matthew 6:33 Jesus said: **“But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness, and all these things shall be added unto you.”**

Very directly, Christ tells that your righteousness by The Law of Moses or any other righteousness will not please God. It will not SAVE you. The only way you can be Saved is by His (God's) Righteousness. To achieve God's Righteousness, you must have Christ in you (Colossians 1:27), which is given by God's Holy Spirit. Paul said the same thing (Romans 10:1-4).

The difference between the “letter” and “Spirit” is like night and day. The Spirit is the process of God writing His Law (Ten Commandments) in your heart (Romans 2:14-15). The letter is when you try to keep The Law by your own human effort. This only kills. But God's Spirit in you gives life by changing your nature. This is what God wanted from the beginning (Deuteronomy 5:29). He added nothing more.

You cannot keep The Law of Moses in the letter and believe you will receive Life. You can only receive Life in The Spirit by means of The New Covenant. God is the One who writes His Ten Commandments in your heart – which is His Righteousness (Hebrews 10:16).

This is The Bible difference between The Old Covenant and The New Covenant. Paul said in verse 23: **“Let us hold fast the profession [New Covenant] of our faith without wavering; (for he is faithful that promised;)...”**

THE LAW IS SPIRITUAL

Here is the crux of the problem. The Law (Torah) has many parts. These are for different purposes, time periods, etc. Most of The Torah (First Five Books of The Bible) covers history. Very little of The Torah recorded in The Bible, states various laws where God tells you what to do – or not do.

Much of The Torah is history. The Added Law was put into The Torah because Israel sinned. Most of The Torah (The Law) requires you to have faith and trust in God – rather than publishing numerous do’s and don’ts.

In Romans 7:14, The Apostle Paul states that The Law (Torah) is Spiritual. Since The Law is Spiritual, it cannot die. Since The Law is Spiritual, it must be kept Spiritually – but not in the letter. The Law (Torah) cannot be done away! This leads to a great misunderstanding by many people.

Understanding what The Torah was to accomplish, will clear up the entire misunderstanding. Paul said The Law is Holy, and The Commandments are Holy, just, and good. If kept Spiritually, The Law is Spiritual (Eternal), and is good. This includes The Ten Commandments.

Now what was God's intent with this Law? The English translation of Torah is "The Law." This does not do justice to The First Five Books. In the Hebrew, the word "Law" is The Torah. Torah has a greater meaning than the English word "law."

"Torah" is a precept (statute) Strong's (#845/3384) that comes from (#3384) "to shoot or point out," and "to teach or inform." The root comes from "to shoot an arrow." It, also, applies to "the way or direction." So, The Law (Torah) is really a precept that shows you a way (direction) to something.

In John 14:6, Jesus said that He is THE WAY, THE TRUTH and THE LIFE. Jesus is the way to Life. In Matthew 18:11, Christ said that He came to restore what was lost. John 6:29 declares that believing in Jesus Christ is The Work of God. Therefore, CHRIST IN YOU IS GOD'S WORK. Once The Law brings you to Christ, and you keep it Spiritually (a change of nature), then The Law is ETERNALLY in you.

WHAT WAS LOST

When Adam and Eve were in The Garden of Eden, they lost their chance to eat from The Tree of Life (Eternal Life). This was in Eden or paradise.

When they were expelled by God, two cherubim were placed at the entrance so they could not return to take fruit from The Tree of Life.

Genesis 3:15 gives a great promise. It shows, from the beginning, from the seed of Adam and Eve, a Savior would come to restore what had been lost. Satan would eventually be defeated. In Hebrews 10:1-2, Paul said that The Law (Nomos – Torah) was a shadow (prophecy) about The Messiah – and how He would restore The Tree of Life and paradise.

The Torah, therefore, shows the way that Christ, The Messiah, would come through the promise made to Abraham from the seed of Jacob.

Jacob's name was changed by God to Israel. Jacob's twelve children became known as The Nation of Israel. These Israelites were led by Moses from Egypt to The Promised Land. They were unrepentant and rebellious to God. This began right after the first time He spoke to them directly.

So, God had to give them The Old Covenant, which was not the same as the promise made to Abraham. This Covenant had The Added Law or The Law of Moses. This was because they kept on sinning. This Law of Moses was added to The Ten Commandments and The Torah. But, this was only temporary, in order to bring them to Christ.

The Purpose of The Law of Moses was used only when God was dealing with unrepentant or unconverted people. Once they repented, they came under The New Covenant, which gave them God's Holy Spirit. Then they

would have a new nature in their heart – and be able to keep God's Ten Commandments.

This is the simple Biblical difference between The Old and New Covenants. The Old Mosaic Covenant brought you to Christ, and then once repentant, The New Covenant would apply to Christians.

All of The Law (Torah) is in force. The Law of Moses (still in force) applies, but only to unconverted, unrepentant people. It was not for Christians. With The Temple standing in The Millennium, The Law will be reinstated.

Once converted, you only worship God in Spirit – because God changes the heart by means of His Holy Spirit. Your nature now tells you “right” from “wrong” – because a Christian grows in God's love or “Agapè.” The Old Covenant (Law of Moses) is not needed – even though it is in force for the unrepentant. It will be in force during The Millennium.

In Matthew 5:17-18, Christ said that He did not come to destroy The Law but to fulfill it. In fact, in verse 18, He said that not one jot or one tittle will change till all is fulfilled. Strong's #1096 “ginomae” means a primary verb “to cause” (generate), “be assembled,” and “be brought to pass.” This is the Greek meaning of the English word in Matthew 5:17-18 translated to “fulfill,” or “be brought to pass.” It all becomes simple and Biblically clear.

THE WAY TO CHRIST

The Torah gives the path – or the way to Christ. Christ came to restore Life. This compares with The Tree of Life and paradise. It relates to Adam and Eve and their children. To come to Christ means that one needs to repent. When one doesn't repent, The Law of Moses “is added” in the letter (more homework from the schoolmaster) to bring that person to Jesus. Once one is repentant, then he no longer has a need to be told by The Law of Moses what is “right” or “wrong.”

The New Covenant writes God's Law (Ten Commandments) in your heart by changing your nature. Now Christians come under a higher standard than The Law of Moses, which was written in the letter for those still unrepentant people. Jesus said in Matthew 5:20 that a Christian must be more righteous than The Law of Moses demands in the letter.

Since God places His love (Agapè) in your heart (New Covenant), you will keep The Ten Commandments Spiritually. Hence, it will keep you from killing, coveting, idolatry, etc. This is because you love God and your neighbor. This is a much higher level of Righteousness than The Law of Moses. Never forget that, because of human nature, mankind could never keep the whole Law of Moses.

ANSWER TO SPIRIT & LETTER

What is the answer to The Letter and The Spirit? It is simple! One cannot keep The Letter and The Spirit. The Letter requires human effort or

human deeds and works. Since humans cannot keep the entire Law of Moses, then mankind falls under the curse of The Law – or death.

Keeping The Law of Moses by human effort denies Christ – and your need for Him and The Holy Spirit. You can't have it both ways. You are either in the letter (unrepentant, without Christ) or in Christ and full of God's Holy Spirit that changes your heart.

Jesus said that God only wants converted Christians who worship Him in Spirit (The New Covenant)! You cannot do both. You are either in The Old Covenant (the letter and unrepentant) or in The New Covenant (change of heart).

Summarizing: God gave Moses The Law (Torah) to give the history and the prophecies about The Messiah. Because of Israel's sin, God added The Law of Moses (do's and don'ts) by works and deeds to bring them to Christ. This Law of Moses acted as a schoolmaster.

The burden of administering this Added Law produced the 70 elders (Sanhedrin) to help Moses. This became The Oral Law. This was The Entire Five Books of The Law given to Moses. All of it was to bring a person to Jesus. From the beginning, God only wanted humanity to keep The Ten Commandments in their hearts, which was a change of nature, or love (Agapè). Consequently, God ADDED NO MORE.

TALE OF TWO HOUSES

Jesus plainly said that if you listen to Christ's sayings, then you are like a

wise man (i.e. Ten Virgins), which built his house upon a rock (Christ) (Matthew 7:23-27). He, also, said that if you don't perform his sayings – then you are like a man who built a house on sand, and the wind and rain destroyed that house. What are these two houses?

In Hebrews 3:1-6, Paul said that Christians are partakers of a heavenly calling. What is your Christian calling? Paul said that Christ is The High Priest of everyone's heavenly calling. Then Paul continued and said that Moses was faithful in all his house. Paul then stated how Christ's house (The Rock) had more glory than Moses' house.

In verse 5, Moses tells the difference. The house which Moses built (Old Covenant) was only a testimony (Witness) of things to come (Hebrews 10:1-2). The Whole Law (Heb. Torah, Gk. Nomos) was a shadow (not real) of things to come. Jesus said plainly that Moses spoke of Him (John 5:46).

Everything in Moses' house was temporary – and not real. It was only a shadow of what was real (Christ, The Rock). Read all of Hebrews 8. Verse 5 states that everything which Moses built was just an example (shadow) of heavenly things. Notice how this house of Moses was to cease and vanish away (Hebrews 8:13). This is the house that was built on sand in Matthew 7:23-27. This house did not stand – and, therefore, was destroyed in 70 A.D. by Titus.

When The Temple went down, The Law went, also. There was no way to keep the whole Law without The Temple. The feast days and the whole Law was only a shadow of things to come (Colossians 2:16-17). The

Bible plainly states how the whole Law (Hebrews 10:1-2) is only a shadow of Christ. Verse 17 states that the body is of Christ. It is not The Law or The Holy Days because they are not what are real. They are the house that was destroyed (Hebrews 8:13). Now, what is the real house?

THE REAL HOUSE

Hebrews 3:6 states: **“...But Christ [The Rock] as a son over his own house; whose house are we [those who listen and do Christ's sayings], if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto to the end.”** Christians do not need The Law to tell right from wrong.

This is because Christians have Christ in them (Colossians 1:27). The entire subject of Colossians is about your Righteousness of Christ in you – which is God's Righteousness – rather than the righteousness of The Law, which you could not keep (Deuteronomy 6:25, James 2:10).

CHRIST IS BUILDING HIS HOUSE IN YOU. You are His Temple, His house, and God's household. That is why you are to witness Christ in you, which is His house. This is the tale of the two houses.

Moses' house (The Old Covenant and Law) was only a shadow (not real) to bring you to Christ (Galatians 3:19-25). After faith came, you are no longer under the schoolmaster. It was temporary, and not the real thing. Therefore, it ended in 70 A.D.

This house of The Old Covenant will not be restored until The Millennium when unrepentant Israelites and Gentiles will have their chance to repent

and come to Christ. They will be required to observe the holy days.

HOUSEHOLD OF CHRIST

Christians, who have Christ in them, are of The Household of God. Christ's household keeps the holy days by being what they foreshadowed. You, as Christ's house, are the real thing. Christ is your Passover (sacrificed lamb). Christ has made you unleavened (i.e. unleavened bread). He has given you God's Holy Spirit (Pentecost), and, therefore, Christ has made atonement for you – represented by The Day of Atonement (Yom Kippur).

The unconverted of the world must come to Christ and then live that shadow (observe The Law) during The Millennium. This begins with Christ's return. Christians, which are His House as His Bride, will be helping to bring the unconverted to Christ!

Now consider this. A believer in Christ, who thinks they must keep The Law (The Torah) along with the dos and don'ts of Moses' Administration, misunderstands the difference between The Old and New Covenants.

The Law, written in the letter, tells you the difference between "right" and "wrong." This defines sin (I John 3:4). If one believes they need to keep this Law, then they have no part with The New Covenant. No human can keep The Law by human effort. Only Christ did that. That is the reason for The New Covenant. A new heart was needed.

Since The Law is Spiritual (Romans 7:14), then it must be kept Spiritually. Christians must obey a higher Law – which is The Law of Christ.

When you have God's Holy Spirit, The Spirit teaches you "right" from "wrong" by a change of your heart. God writes His Ten Commandments in your heart. You know "right" from "wrong" by a change of heart, and do not need any written Law to tell you about it. The Law becomes Eternal (Spiritual) in your heart (I John 2:19-21, 27).

A HIGHER DEFINITION

Christians live by a higher definition of sin – just as has been written in I John 5:17, which says: **"All unrighteousness is sin."** In The New Covenant, when you desire someone else's goods, you are guilty of coveting. When you hate your brother, you are guilty of murder.

You see a much higher standard than that provided by The Written Law. Therefore, you cannot be in The Spirit (God's Law written in your heart) and in "the letter." The Letter only requires a person not to sin physically. True Christians are those who know "right" from "wrong" by means of their nature and heart. Therefore, they fulfill (complete) The Law by expressing love (Romans 13:10).

There is one other difference about true believers. The word love in English is very misleading. There are those who believe Christianity is based on emotion or love. There is no need for God's Law (Ten Commandments), but just loving God and neighbor is sufficient. They

believe Christianity is a “feeling” – and many times associate it with uncontrolled passion.

God’s love (Agapè) is totally different. God has emotion and feelings, but this is based upon doing Righteousness. In Matthew 19, when the rich man said he kept The Commandments from his youth up, Christ said that Jesus loved (Agapè) him. Agapè, God’s love, is based upon morality and not sinning. God’s love is based upon The Ten Commandments in your heart (I Timothy 1:5).

Christians, as true followers of Christ, do not need to observe The Written Law (The Torah) as they keep The Ten Commandments. This is because they are on a higher level through a change of heart (which is love).

At the same time, true Christians do not merely follow Christ by means of feelings or emotions – and keep on sinning. But rather, they have a heart of love that keeps them from sinning. This is The New Covenant, which is a more glorious and better Covenant than The Old Covenant with The Law of Moses. The New Covenant is Christ in you (Colossians 1:27). YOU ARE “ONE” WITH GOD AS GOD REPRODUCES HIMSELF IN YOU AND YOU BECOME HIS SONS.

CHAPTER 12

SATAN – GOD’S HELPER

Why have a Lake of Fire? What is its Purpose?

In short, why would a loving God create a Lake of Fire? You need to understand why God would place a Lake of Fire in His Plan. Can’t there be a better way to care for all the faithful people and give them Eternal Life – while the unconverted are placed into this Lake to burn?

You must understand how God thinks.

Why did God choose to do things this way? That is a big broad question. Since God is perfect, good, righteous, merciful, and full of love, couldn’t He have found a better way to accomplish His Plan? Why use a Satan?

Why would God need a devil to carry out His Plan? You need to look at The Mind of God – and how He thinks. Only then, will you begin to understand why God has a perfect Plan in which Satan plays such an integral part.

Philippians 2:1-5 ¹If there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels and mercies, ²Fulfil ye my joy, that ye be like-minded, having the same love, being of one

accord, of one mind. ³Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves. ⁴Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others. ⁵Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus:

In Philippians 2, Paul describes feelings so deep that they become part of the body and Spirit. To fulfill this joy, one must become like Paul’s description of a Christian.

How should one behave as Christians? Not to be so concerned about yourself would be one good way. Christ was never self-centered. He always thought about others. Christ has a mind that thinks only about the welfare of God’s Creation.

Hebrews 1:3 Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high;

IMAGE OF CHARACTER

Christ looks exactly like The Father. The word for “Image” in the Greek is “charakter” or “character.” God, The Father, only thinks about the good that can be done for others. So, understand Christ is just like The Father.

Psalm 40:1-5 ¹I waited patiently for the Lord; and he

inclined unto me, and heard my cry. ²He brought me up also out of an horrible pit, out of the miry clay, and set my feet upon a rock, and established my goings. ³And he hath put a new song in my mouth, even praise unto our God: many shall see it, and fear, and shall trust in the Lord. ⁴Blessed is that man that maketh the Lord his trust, and respecteth not the proud, nor such as turn aside to lies. ⁵Many, O Lord my God, are thy wonderful works which thou hast done, and thy thoughts which are to us-ward: they cannot be reckoned up in order unto thee: if I would declare and speak of them, they are more than can be numbered.

Here is an algebra problem about God's character. Instead of using $A + B$, or $A + X = B$, use righteousness + love + character + goodness + perfection = GOD'S MIND.

David talked about how God thinks. David: "...**waited patiently for the Lord; and he inclined unto me, and heard my cry.**" David said that God: "...**brought me also out of an horrible pit [Lake of Fire] out of the miry clay, and set my feet upon a rock [which was Christ], and established my goings.**" Christ made a way. It is established, firm, and safe. These are His wonderful works, and HIS PLAN.

When God created A Plan for Salvation (to reproduce Himself), the intent of His thoughts and implementation was to Save everyone. So, The Lake of Fire was designed to purify sinners. The only choice one has is about the duration of time required for an individual to repent! In some cases, it

will only take a short period. But, for the incorrigible ones, it may take longer. But don’t be concerned, because God gives everyone all the time they need to repent.

I Corinthians 13:6-9 ⁶Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth; ⁷Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things. ⁸Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away. ⁹For we know in part, and we prophesy in part.

One of God’s traits is love or “agapè.” **“Charity”** [“Agapè” or love] **“never faileth.”** Agapè love is always there. You can always depend upon it. It is like a rock. This is because: **“...we know in part, and we prophesy in part.”**

I Corinthians 13:5 Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil;

HOW LOVE BEHAVES

Love does not behave indecently. This is because **“God is love”** (I John 4:8). God is “Agapè.” God never seeks His own. God has that type of mind. It is wonderful to know this God who has free choice, and who has everything, never needs anything, and who always was, who is today, and who always will be.

God wants to share love with His Creation. He can do whatever He wants. This is because He is Love (“agapè”), and He is Righteous by His very nature. The largest sacrifice that God could give is, Himself.

Yet God created a problem for Himself. It is summed up in the question: “How do you clone yourself?” Atheists ask if there is a God. They wonder why He makes humans have to progress through a lifetime, with all its imperfections and problems. Why didn't He make you perfect in the beginning? You read: “**Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect**” (Matthew 5:48).

If God made everyone perfect in the beginning, He would not have brought forth a reproduction called a Son. Rather, God would have created a robot. When God decided to reproduce Himself, He created an awesome, mind-boggling job for Himself. He had to cause the reproduction of Himself to come forth directly from Himself. The entire puzzle of The Bible is about becoming AT ONE WITH GOD.

James 1:25 But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.

The Sacrifice that Jesus Christ made was tremendous. This is because no greater love can a man have – than to lay down his life for his friends. But God sacrificed all of Himself for your good. That is The Plan, which He devised to accomplish His Purpose. James talks about a ROYAL LAW. A Royal Law is a Kingly Law – or a Law from God.

James 2:8 If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well:

THE ROYAL LAW

A Royal Law of God gives you liberty and true freedom – not bondage or slavery. God’s Plan was to give His creation Eternal Life. His creation was not placed into bondage or slavery. Individuals must have total free choice. Since God is reproducing Himself, these beings were required to have unlimited free choice. This is because anything less would not be from God.

Now, it seems that God created another problem for Himself. If He created human beings with total free choice to decide what is right and wrong – and if they had Eternal Life – then what would be the result? Would it be confusion? Everyone would have had a different way of doing things. Yet God’s creation had to be free to choose (within a limited time frame) before embracing Eternal Life.

There was no other way. Remember, God made man in His own image. But God did not give man “the perfection” that He has. Therefore, God could not allow mankind to live forever, after having made the choice to sin. God couldn’t have made you perfect in the beginning, since there was no guarantee that you would choose to be sinless.

If everyone did what was “right” in his own eyes, earthbound societies would end up in mayhem. It would be another Sodom and Gomorrah. So

God created A PLAN where everyone would ultimately become perfect by his own choice – like God.

John 14:5-6 ⁵Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way?
⁶Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.

This is Jesus Christ talking just before He left earth to be with The Father. This is right before His crucifixion. Jesus was leaving instructions to The Apostles, and left them with some interesting thoughts.

DOUBTING THOMAS

In John 14, you find the account of a doubting Thomas. What is the meaning of this story? It shows you God has a system – but Satan, also, has a system. Satan wants you to follow “his system.” This is a totally different – as it is a way of living carnally. And, Satan’s system will lead you into pain and misery. **GOD’S SYSTEM IS DESIGNED TO TRAIN YOU TO BECOME RIGHTEOUS, MERCIFUL, LOVING, AND PERFECT – ALL OF WHICH LEADS TO LIFE EVERLASTING!**

Christ said: **“I am the way, the truth, and the life”** (John 14:6). In Hebrews 1, Christ tells you The Truth of God. Only He knows the facts. He is The Light, which will give you LIFE. But then humanity always wants to do things another way. These are two diametrically opposed systems. In Psalm 40, you have the proof about **THE WHOLE PLAN OF GOD.**

Ephesians 3:14-15 ¹⁴**For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,** ¹⁵**Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named,**

Understand that The Purpose of human life is for you to become a SON OF GOD. God is reproducing Himself through a family. Hence, there must be a father, a mother, and then there are the children.

If God wants to give His children everything, then it means that they will receive AN INHERITANCE. Through AN INHERITANCE, God is passing on everything that He is – and all that He has – to His children. Everything He possesses (including Eternal Life) is contained in Him. This is what The Sabbath represents. His Rest portrays everything that is good and plentiful (complete blessings). There is no pain, suffering, debt, or death.

CHILDREN AND INHERITANCE

Children don’t always understand what AN INHERITANCE means. It is a “right,” but it is only a right because the giver has decided to make it “a right.” But mankind does not respect THE LAW OF INHERITANCE. The Government wants to tax it. The intent is to make everything and everyone equal.

God doesn’t want to make everything equal. He wants to decide what each being in His family will receive according to their Spiritual growth. He tells you that His first begotten Son, Jesus Christ, receives everything –

and then the remainder of the children will receive their “individual Inheritance,” according to their works.

God could not have created a better Plan of Salvation. Indeed, God wants to give An Inheritance to His heirs. Man and the government want to steal most of the Inheritance – or worse yet – dissipate it.

How does God give that Inheritance? In John 14, Christ said that He is THE WAY and THE TRUTH. HE WANTS TO GIVE YOU LIFE. Anything outside of that system is wrong. God made a promise to Abraham – and He passed all those blessings to the seed of Abraham. The children of Israel were to receive “The Inheritance,” but they were rebellious. So instead, God gave them a Law.

He had to give them a Law because they were unconverted. The Law of God was given to Moses to make the children of Israel realize they were carnal. The Law did not make them Righteous or like God. God has made it all so clear, yet Christians argue whether they should keep The Law or not.

Carnal individuals are sinners – which is doing what they want. To take the first step away from being a sinner, The Law was instituted so they could realize they were sinners. The Law was intended to bring them to Christ – so they could repent (Galatians 3:24). God never loses, and never makes mistakes.

GOD’S PLAN

God had to devised A PLAN whereby His creation would never get lost. God is Perfect, and what He Wills, He also carries out (Ephesians 1:10-11). He always succeeds! So God came up with a system whereby no one can be lost. God does not abort. He will bring every human life to Salvation! That was why Christ came to this earth (I John 4:14).

Matthew 13:36-38 ³⁶Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field. ³⁷He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; ³⁸The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one;

God’s system guarantees Salvation for everyone. This will be accomplished through His Son, Jesus Christ. John 6:29 explains all of this, and that The Plan will come to a successful conclusion. If you do not understand how God thinks, then you cannot understand the following statement from Matthew 13: **“³⁶Then Jesus sent the multitude away.”** This was for a very good reason.

Remember that John 14:6 says: **“I am the way.”** In that same context, you read: **“³⁷He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; ³⁸The field is the world [God’s Plan of Salvation]; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares [weeds thrown into this field] are**

the children of the wicked one..." Satan bears children just like God bears children.

In a contest between God and Satan, who is predicted to win? On one side, you find that Satan is developing his children. Then, on the other side, God is developing His children. Do you remember the story of the turtle and the hare? You will find that God and his children are like the turtle, and the children of Satan are compared to the hare.

Galatians 4:19-27 ¹⁹My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you. ²⁰I desire to be present with you now, and to change my voice; for I stand in doubt of you. ²¹Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law? ²²For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman. ²³But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh; but he of the freewoman was by promise. ²⁴Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar. ²⁵For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children. ²⁶But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all. ²⁷For it is written, Rejoice, thou barren that bearest not; break forth and cry, thou that travailest not: for the

desolate hath many more children than she which hath an husband.

The Apostle Paul explained that if anyone preached another gospel (Chapter 7 – The True Gospel), then The Law of Moses could never SAVE mankind. In Galatians 4: **“¹⁹My little children, of whom I travail in birth [talking about a family, and children] again until Christ be formed in you.”** God’s Purpose is to reproduce Himself in you. **“²⁰I desire to be present with you now, and to change my voice; for I stand in doubt of you.”**

BOND & FREE

Paul continues: **“²²For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman. ²³But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh.”** The bondwoman, also, produced children. This was done after the flesh. Sarah was childless, but she convinced her husband Abraham, to have children through the bondwoman

This was something called “free choice” – which ended in sorrow for everyone. Sarah told Abraham to take her handmaid Hagar, and produce a baby. As a quick refresher (Chapter 8 – Marriage – the Great Mystery), there are two types of marriages: (#1) God’s marriage which is through bone of my bone and flesh of my flesh, you become ONE. What God has joined together let no one put asunder (you become one with God).

Then (#2) the other type of marriage is Satanic. It was allowed in The Law of Moses. It was according to the teaching of Baal. This Baal was “the god of fertility” – or the lord who owned the virgins among the women. They were property. So that was the choice which Eve made when she took of The Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. She incurred all the penalties of Satan's system.

Satan does not believe in marriage the way God does. Satan views women as property. Abraham was not sinning when he took Hagar, because Hagar was his property. This was allowed in The Law of Moses. This was the solution that Sarah rationalized into action. Later it caused Abraham a great deal of grief

Paul explains this scenario: **“²⁴Which things are an allegory for these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, [speaking of The Law of Moses] which gendereth to bondage, which is by Agar.”** The Law of Moses had to be given to unconverted people (I Timothy 1:9-10).

MOUNT SINAI

The Law never made anyone Righteous or Perfect. The Law of Moses only informs sinners that they are sinning. **“²⁵For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children. ²⁶But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.”** Christ is the sower, and the children of God are opposed to the tares (the children of Satan).

Hagar and Ismael were cast out because they could not be part of The Inheritance. Remember, God is reproducing Himself through The Principle of Inheritance. The desolate were told plainly that they: “...**hath many more children than she which hath an husband.**”

Hagar was not properly married to Abraham. Sarah was married to Abraham. They were “bone of bone” and “flesh of flesh,” and no one was to tear them apart. That is quite plain and simple. Satan knows his system is going to produce more children in the short-term than God’s system. But short-term gain is long-term loss.

Satan does not require marriage. He promotes just living together. You can have one-night stands and produce as many children as you want. In Matthew 22:14, God says: “**For many are called, but few are chosen.**” So they must go into The Lake of Fire.

Ezekiel 28:1-2 ¹The word of the Lord came again unto me, saying, ²Son of man, say unto the prince of Tyrus, **Thus saith the Lord God; Because thine heart is lifted up, and thou hast said, I am a God, I sit in the seat of God, in the midst of the seas; yet thou art a man, and not God, though thou set thine heart as the heart of God:**

How did Satan come up with this plan? Ezekiel 28 tells the story about The Prince of Tyre who ruled over The Island of Tyre – known in the history books as Phoenicia.

PHOENICIA

Phoenicia was a merchant giant. Archaeologically, people are discovering Phoenician writings in far away places such as The United States and South America. This giant of merchandising was perhaps the first form of globalization.

The Prince of Tyre was bigheaded. He was a tycoon. He was like a veritable New York executive of his day. His ships were sailing and trading all over the world. This is about the time of Solomon and David. This prince was using Satan's system to gain wealth. Satan may have been directing him, influencing him, and literally possessing his very being.

In Ezekiel 28: **"¹The word of the Lord came again unto me, saying, ²Son of man, say unto the prince of Tyrus, Thus said the Lord God; Because thine heart is lifted up...."** This shows that the heart of proud men may become highly exalted. And yet God, the most powerful Being in existence, has a humble heart.

Although it is difficult to think of God as being humble, He is. He always thinks outside of Himself. He is not worried about self-esteem. Why should He? His thoughts are always toward doing what is good. He is THE PERFECT EXAMPLE.

David was the same way. David was a sinner, in that he did things that were terribly wrong. He murdered, committed adultery, and did many

other sinful things. But he always repented – and his heart was humble. God said that David had a heart like His own.

PRINCE OF TYRE

On the other hand, The Prince of Tyre was another story. God said: **“Because thine heart is lifted up, and thou hast said, I am a God** [referring not only to The Prince of Tyre, but to Satan, also], **I sit in the seat of God, in the midst of the seas....”** This was economic merchandising the world over. This was Satan’s world. Satan never doubts that God is God. Satan knows God is God. Not only that, but Satan never even thought of being God himself. Satan just wanted to be “like” God.

Ezekiel 28:11-13 ¹¹Moreover the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, ¹²Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus, and say unto him, Thus saith the Lord God; Thou sealest up the sum, full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty. ¹³Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created.

These texts are not talking about a man. Notice especially the words: **“¹³Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God....”** Imagine a snake

wrapped around the tree and then his head pops out. But, that is not what Eve saw. Here is what she saw: **“Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold:”**

This is what Satan really looked like. Amazing isn't it? He was like a serpent. Although Satan was deceptive, he was good looking and sure of himself, such as today's con men. **“...and the carbuncle, and gold: the workmanship of thy tabrets and of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created.”**

TOOL TO DECEIVE

God purposely made The Bible into a puzzle. To understand the puzzle in The Bible, He purposely wanted people to be converted at different times (when they are ready). All people are not destined to know The Truth at the same time. So Satan was God's tool to deceive God's creation. God gave Satan that authority.

John 8:43-47 ⁴³Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word. ⁴⁴Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. ⁴⁵And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not. ⁴⁶Which of you convinceth me of sin?

And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me? ⁴⁷He that is of God heareth God’s words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.

When talking to The Pharisees and Sadducees, Jesus Christ said that they were of their father, The Devil. That is quite clear. It is the “Diablo.”

Satan’s children are liars. If all humanity understood God’s Truth at the same time, they would be feeling guilty. They would feel responsible for what they do. They would know they are sinning. As long as Satan deceives, these people are misled into thinking they are doing okay. It is very hard to help anyone who is doing something very wrong. And it is tough for people to admit they are wrong. Not many can be like the person in The Temple who said: **“God forgive me. I am a sinner.”**

GOD USES SATAN

God uses Satan to help fulfill His Plan. When Satan rebelled and was tossed to earth, he became God’s tool. Remember, in Isaiah 45:7, God says: **“I create evil.”** But God cannot be evil. God cannot sin. If He ever sinned, He would not be God. God could not have been “The One” to keep anyone from not understanding Him.

Your Savior not only had to give His life for you, but He, also, had to be able to Judge Righteously. He could not judge righteously if He was a violator of The Law. Remember, when The Pharisees and The Levites brought an adulteress to Jesus, according to The Law of Moses, she had to be stoned. Christ stooped down, wrote in the sand, and may have written

their sins. No one knows. But when they all left, Christ said: **“Neither do I condemn you.”** They really had no right to condemn her because they, themselves, were sinners.

Why doesn't God do the judging? Did you ever hear of being judged by twelve of your own peers? Until you have walked in the Indian's moccasins, don't make a judgment. Hebrews states: **“Christ was tempted in every way like as we, yet without sin.”** God couldn't judge you because He never sinned. God never experienced carnal nature.

So, Christ had to become a human being. He was required to live sinlessly as a human being, so He could be A RIGHTEOUS JUDGE who was an exact reproduction of God, The Father. This demonstrates again what a perfect Plan God has made. No one but God could have created anything like it.

Ezekiel 28:14-16 ¹⁴Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so: thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. ¹⁵Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, til iniquity was found in thee. ¹⁶By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, and thou hast sinned: therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire.

WHAT GOD NEEDED

God used one who could be a liar. He is one without feelings or sympathy for what human beings endure. God needed someone who was good-looking, pompous, and had a huge ego. In Ezekiel 28:12 you read Satan was: “...full of wisdom, and perfect in beauty. ¹⁴**Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth....**” Satan was one of the three cherubs, named: Michael, Gabriel, and Hay-lale.

The word Lucifer is not in The Bible. A Catholic, called Saint Jerome (A.D. 345-420) translated the Hebrew “Hay-lale” into “Lucifer.” As mentioned before, in the Hebrew, “Hay-lale” means “one who proclaims.” Satan knew the whole story. He knew God’s whole plan. But he didn’t like it.

In this context, you read the vital concept: “¹⁴**Thou are the anointed cherub that covereth; and I have set thee so; thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. ¹⁵Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee.**”

How did all this happen? It was by means of: “¹⁶**...the multitude of thy merchandise...**” This brings you back to The Prince of Tyre. What God says is that: “**...I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy thee, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire.**” Christians say that Satan is going into the fire. It is obvious here that he will get thrown into The Lake of Fire. All this will become clear later.

Genesis 3:1-7 ¹Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? ²And the woman said unto the serpent. We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: ³But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. ⁴And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: ⁵For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. ⁶And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. ⁷And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons.

Satan was in The Garden of Eden, but he was not like a snake slithering around. He was this awesome cherub with all his beauty – just like glistening jewels. But he acted like a deceptive snake, and he may have frightened Adam.

SATAN’S GREAT DECEPTION

While he talks to Eve, Satan tells what he thinks and believes: **“⁴And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die....”** Satan was correct in this assessment – but he was deceptive at the same time. He didn’t tell Eve that between then – and the time of receiving Salvation – she would die once, and perhaps twice. Satan is tricky. His system is the direct opposite from God’s system of honesty: **“⁵For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened...”**

Most Christians think that Satan lied to Eve, but he did not. After she ate and gave the fruit to her husband and he ate it with her, they both hid themselves from God – by trying to clothe themselves. Now, for the first time, they understood about sex and passion. When they ate the fruit, they knew they were naked. So Satan told her The Truth long before they were ready to handle it.

Satan never tells the whole truth – but just enough to suit “his” purpose. **“⁶And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. ⁷And the eyes of them both were opened,”**

So the message was the truth, but it was very deceptive. Remember that the best liars are those who believe their own lies. Realize that Adam always talked directly to the angel from God. But he listened to his wife.

This was a stupid decision. Hence, they received the penalty for disobedience.

ADAM LOST THE EASY LIFE

Adam lost an easy life. He became responsible for Eve, who became his property. Initially it was hard for Adam to refuse her. How can you refuse your own flesh? For disobeying, Adam lost Eternal Life. Eve became his property, and her desire was for him to rule over her. She entered the system of Satan. She gave herself to Satan. Adam and Eve became Satan's instruments, and now they were worshipping Baal.

Jeremiah 7:1-7: ¹The word that came to Jeremiah from the Lord, saying, ²Stand in the gate of the Lord's house, and proclaim there this word, and say, Hear the word of the Lord, all ye of Judah, that enter in at these gates to worship the Lord. ³Thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel, Amend your ways and your doings, and I will cause you to dwell in this place. ⁴Trust ye not in lying words, saying, The temple of the Lord, the temple of the Lord, The temple of the Lord, are these ⁵For if ye thoroughly amend your ways and your doings; if ye thoroughly execute judgment between a man and his neighbour; ⁶If ye oppress not the stranger, the fatherless, and the widow, and shed not innocent blood in this place, neither walk after other gods to your hurt:

⁷Then will I cause you to dwell in this place, in the land that I gave to your fathers, for ever and ever.

In history, when you study The Aztecs, you will find that they practiced “the shedding of innocent blood” by burning their children in sacrifice to their pagan god, Moleck. The account above is about Judah (Jews), being one of The Tribes of Israel.

This is the story of Judah (Jews) going in and worshipping at God’s Temple. God says to: **“⁴Trust ye not in lying words...”** What were they following? They were appealing for protection by means of The Temple. They were calling out for deliverance.

Jeremiah 7: 17-18 ¹⁷Seest thou not what they do in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem? ¹⁸The children gather wood, and the fathers kindle the fire, and the women knead their dough, to make cakes to the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto other gods, that they may provoke me to anger.

STEALING FROM GOD’S TEMPLE

They were coming to God’s Temple, and stealing: **“Seest thou not what they do in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem? The children gather wood, and the fathers kindle the fire, and the women knead their dough, to make cakes to the queen of heaven.”** This is the tradition of Ashtar [Easter] in Babylon, The Great. This is a proclamation

saying that this woman would never be a widow. Yet, these drink offerings provoked God to anger.

Jeremiah 7:20 Therefore thus saith the Lord God; Behold mine anger and my fury shall be poured out upon this place, upon man and upon beast, and upon the trees of the field, and upon the fruit of the ground; and it shall burn, and shall not be quenched.

Jeremiah 7:29-32 ²⁹Cut off thine hair, O Jerusalem, and cast it away, and take up a lamentation on high places; for the Lord hath rejected and forsaken the generation of his wrath. ³⁰For the children of Judah, have done evil in my sight, saith the Lord: they have set their abominations in the house which is called by my name, to pollute it. ³¹And they have built the high places of Tophet, which is in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to burn their sons and their daughters in the fire; which I commanded them not, neither came it unto my heart. ³²Therefore, behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that it shall no more be called Tophet, nor the valley of the son of Hinnom, but the valley of slaughter: for they shall bury in Tophet, till there be no place.

Notice how the anger, fury, and the fire are all related to God's attitude toward this ruinous conduct: "...it shall burn, and shall not be quenched [The Lake of Fire]. ²⁹Cut off thine hair, O Jerusalem..."

When a woman became a harlot, she loses her covering, which is her hair. This signified the angels protecting the woman.

What were they doing to offend The Temple? The answer is: **“³¹And they have built the high places of Tophet.”** Tophet is a village where they did their cremations. This site is located **“...in the valley of the son of Hinnom.”** The Hebrew word “Hinnom,” is “Gehenna,” in the Greek, and relates to “The Lake of Fire.” **“³¹...to burn their sons and their daughters in the fire; which I commanded them not, neither came it into my heart. ³²Therefore, behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that it shall no more be called Tophet, nor the valley of the son of Hinnom, but the valley of slaughter:”** They were killing infants.

CHILDREN OFFERED TO BAAL

They were offering their children in sacrifice to the god of Baal. Why would Satan want beautiful little children to be burned? Because Satan knows that he, himself, is also going to be burned. Repentance is to become as a little child.

So through pagan religions all over the world, Satan convinced people to throw their own flesh and blood (their own children) into the fire. Satan convinced them that their pagan gods would be appeased. Satan knew he was supposed to be as a little child, but he never changed his attitude. If the followers of Satan had obeyed The True God and became as little children (and repented), then God would have SAVED them.

Matthew 8:28-29 ²⁸And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. ²⁹And, behold they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?

These demons knew what awaited them: ^{“29}And, behold, they cried out, saying, what have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?” Satan, himself, knows he will be going into The Lake of Fire. He, and one-third of the angels who rebelled and became demons, all know that they will be going into The Lake of Fire.

CHAINS OF DARKNESS

Christ said: **“They are cast with chains in darkness, all in torment, constantly, fearing the Lake of Fire.”** So, these demons seek refuge in humans, who have given themselves over to Satan. Humans can be **SAVED** from The Fire, but only through Christ. When Christ cast the demons out of that raving, ranting, possessed person, the demons said: **“Cast us into the pigs. It’s better to be in the pigs, than to roam around, in stress and torment.”**

Read Job 1, where Satan comes before God with The Sons of God. God asked Satan if he had ever seen a man as upright and perfect as Job – a man who hates evil so deeply. Satan’s answer was that Job obeyed God

and listened to Him because God had blessed Job’s life. With Satan’s remark, God used Satan to prove a point.

Remember that God asked Satan the question. God knew He had to use Satan. God creates evil, but does not perpetrate it. A proud, ego-driven angel fought against God. The angel lost, and was given the earth as his kingdom to deceive as many as he could. This angel became Satan. God knew the inner workings of Satan, and so God will use him to eventually SAVE EVERYONE.

Isaiah 14:4 That thou shalt take up this proverb against the king of Babylon, and say, How hath the oppressor ceased! The golden city ceased!

In Ezekiel 48, you find that Satan’s way is to traffic in merchandise. This is globalization. It is not by INHERITANCE as God intended. Rather it strives to obtain as much economic control, as possible, over the whole world. You can readily see the form of government that Satan believes in. So you must separate the two: (#1) Ezekiel 28 has to do with economics, and (#2) Isaiah 14 concerns government.

GOD’S WAY VS. SATAN’S WAY

God’s way is for you to become “one” with God. But Satan’s way is just a form of possession. Satan’s form of government is a dictatorship ruling over people. Satan promotes the attitude of not giving and not loving – but just taking. That is the difference between Satan’s way and God’s way: **“⁴That thou shalt take up this proverb against the king of**

Babylon, and say, How hath the oppressor ceased! The golden city ceased!”

Isaiah 14: 10-12 ¹⁰All they shall speak and say unto thee, Art thou also become weak as we? art thou become like unto us? ¹¹Thy pomp is brought down to the grave, and the noise of thy viols: the worm is spread under thee, and the worms cover thee. ¹²How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!

Whose pomp is this? Remember that Nebuchadnezzar (Babylon) had to wander around as a wild man for seven years. This was until Nebuchadnezzar learned there was a God in heaven who ruled in the affairs of man. Going on: **“¹¹...the noise of thy viols [harps]: the worm is spread under thee [this is The Lake of Fire], and the worms cover thee. ¹²How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!”** Isaiah 14 shows Satan ruling over Babylon. This is an oppressive, violent government of dictatorship. Then in Ezekiel 28 you see that he controlled all the economics of the world through globalization.

Revelation 18:2-3 ²And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. ³For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of

her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.

These texts are looking at the woes of Babylon in Isaiah 14. Notice the similarities. The leaders of the earth are promoting globalization for the masses. Yet the masses will be impoverished by this means. All the while, those who participate will be made “rich men.” So, you see that Revelation 18 ties in with Isaiah 14 and Ezekiel 28. Study them carefully.

Revelations 18:7-8 ⁷How much she hath glorified herself, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she saith in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow. ⁸Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her.

Who is this great woman? Obviously, it is a magnificent commercial power. She sits as a queen. Do you remember The Queen of Heaven? Yet you find that she claims: “...I am no widow...” Of course she is not a widow – because she never married. Although she claims she will “...see no sorrow...” – yet verse 8 shows that in one day, it all comes to an end. Christ returns and Satan is taken and imprisoned for a thousand years.

SATAN'S SYSTEM OF MARRIAGE

The main point being made is Satan's system of marriage. This concerns the right of ownership, payment, prostitution, or harlotry – which seals it all. This is a total opposite system from Christ's, which is: **“I am the way and the truth and the life.”** Satan's system is totally opposed to God's way. Read Matthew 24 so you will know what Christ will find before He returns. If Satan did not deceive mankind, then man would have been held totally responsible.

Satan plays a very important role in God's Plan. Because of Satan's nature, he has a vital purpose to fulfill. He may know that God is using him. He, also, knows that, in the end, he will be placed in The Lake of Fire. Satan's system tries to break up families, eliminate Inheritance, and to put the son against the father, and the daughter against the mother. He does everything he can to destroy God's system.

Another example of Satan's method is the way he uses homosexuality. But children cannot be born through homosexuality. This life-style is one of Satan's systems to con men and women.

Before the return of Christ, the wrath of God is poured out upon Satan and Babylon. God proclaims that it takes two witnesses to pronounce someone guilty of adultery. Before Babylon falls, there are the two witnesses who find her guilty and wanting. God uses the whole Satanic system – so mankind will not be held responsible until their opportunity for Salvation comes along – which is The Lake of Fire.

TWO WITNESSES

Where are the two witnesses who could testify against adultery? God’s Law requires two or more witnesses. Perhaps, the two witnesses of Revelation 11 are two churches, which are called candlesticks (two candlesticks). In the beginning of The Book of Revelation God says there are seven candlesticks.

After you are resurrected and become God’s children (remember there can be no sin in the presence of God), then He will wipe away your tears, and you will not remember them any more. All the painful things will be forgotten. You will come to the place of wanting to obey God’s way. You probably will remember living on this earth. It seems logical that the lessons you had learned will not be forgotten.

As an example, when I was in the Navy, I hated it so much that each day I’d put an “X” on my calendar until I was discharged. That is how much I hated being in the Navy. After being discharged, and after a period of time, all I could do was talk about the fun times I had in the service. But I never forgot how I disliked it. God may have you remember the experience, but not the pain and sufferings.

Another example is childbirth. After the child is born, the mother starts to forget the pain and suffering. To be born into The Kingdom of God, you are happy because you will be a Spirit Being. Mothers often go through the painful experience, but are left with such joy that there are no bad memories.

I remember all the times that I was spanked by my father and my mother. Yet, I never held anything against them. My Dad would spank me hard. I would go into my bedroom, and he would make me stay there. I would say: "I'm going to run away when I grow up." Today that means nothing. I don't remember the pain. But I know that I was spanked. Yet, I still loved my parents.

Christ does not do any judging until the time of The Jubilee. His role changes from Savior to Judge. He becomes The Judge of all Judges. He must RELEASE everyone during The Time of Jubilee. The Jubilee marks the end of Satan being used by God in His Plan. Remember that The Purpose of The Lake of Fire is to purge sin, so that everyone can repent through the death of the flesh. Only The Spirit will survive, TO LIVE ETERNALLY! (I Corinthians 5:5).

CHAPTER 13

GOD'S ETERNAL FIRE

Many pagans believe The Lake of Fire is an “eternal” fire. Some believe that once you are thrown in, you are tormented forever – and eternally toasted and roasted. Others believe when you are thrown in, you will be completely incinerated. Actually, both of these beliefs are somewhat correct. As a Christian who wants to obey God, Satan will look for a way to get you confused. He does not need to tell you a straight-out lie; he just will not tell you The Whole Truth.

The best liar is one who bases his deceit on some aspect of truth. Satan was able to fool Adam and Eve. Since then, his prime targets are Christians, although he has also obviously misdirected many agnostics and atheists. Satan continually tries to deceive you by twisting and camouflaging THE TRUTH. The whole world follows him (read: John 8 & Revelation 12:9).

Why does a loving God create a Lake of Fire? If all have sinned and the wages of sin is certain death, why resurrect anyone? Those who repent

and want to change should be the only ones to be Resurrected to Life. Isn't this correct? The unrepentant should remain dead. Doesn't that make sense?

Why would God resurrect people when He already knows they will burn? This question should bother you, because it doesn't sound like a loving God. What is The Real Purpose of The Lake of Fire? When you understand the reason for it, you will understand God and His "masterful" Plan.

CHRIST RETURNS

Revelation 19:20-21 ²⁰**And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.** * ²¹**And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.**

In Revelation 19, Jesus Christ returns to the earth and subdues all the enemies of righteousness. This takes place at The Great Battle of Armageddon. Christ becomes King of Kings and Lord of Lords. At that time, a political system exists, which is headed by a person known as the beast. A scam of a religious system identified as The False Prophet, also, exists. Christ defeats all the hostile armies as He comes into Jerusalem.

The beast corresponds to the false political system, which is a Gentile creation known as Babylon. Both the false religious system and the false political system are subdued at the end time. Read: **“These both were cast alive into a lake of fire.”** Notice the article “a” in the phrase “a Lake of Fire.” It is not “the” Lake of Fire. This fire is: **“...burning with brimstone.** (The Greek word for “brimstone” is “theion.” Theion can also mean “Divine,” as in something from God [“Theos” – the root word – means “God”]). When lightning struck the earth, the areas were called “theia,” and a sulfurous smell wafted through the air. This is God’s Lake of Fire -- a Divine Fire, a fire that purifies.) **And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse** [this is Christ].” From this scenario, you can now proceed to another phase of this prophesied condition:

Revelation 20:1-6 ¹And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. ²And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, ³And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season. ⁴And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them; and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither

had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. ⁵But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. ⁶Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

Peter tells you this hell, which is “tartaroo” is a “place of restraint.” This is the hell that is reserved only for Satan. It concerns the angel with “the key to the bottomless pit” who has a great chain in his hand to bind Satan. Satan is bound in “tartaroo,” which is a “place of restraint.” This will be for a thousand years. The false prophet and the beast are thrown into “a” Lake of Fire.

For 1,000 years, the beast and false prophet are kept in a Lake of Fire where they have been cast. Now what happens? “⁴**And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them....**” This is A Resurrection that takes place. Christ gives Judgment, but “the resurrected” [Christians] will, also, be Judges. Now it is important to realize that the souls who are beheaded are those who bore witness of Jesus. This, also, includes those Christians who existed before The Resurrection.

A THOUSAND YEARS

The Lake of Fire will burn for at least a thousand years, but after a

thousand years this Lake of Fire will remain. Then you read: “⁵**But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection.**” These are those who are reigning with Christ. Those who are in the first resurrection will reign with Christ, and both will perform judgment during the thousand-year period.

Then, you read: “⁶**Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power....**” The second death has no power. So there must be two deaths. In the face of one clear text, how can there be two deaths?

Hebrews 9:27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment:

The Greek word for “appointed” means “reserve” or “set aside.” This is appointed when you reserve something – such as: “**...unto men once to die.**” Is this a contradiction? In Revelation there are two deaths. Yet, Paul, very clearly, says that “**...it is appointed [reserved] unto men once to die....**”

It is only appointed for you to die once. When you sin, and then you die, then your sins are paid in full. This is because the wages of sin is death. That is the end result. Why then will you be resurrected and thrown in The Fire to die again? “**...but after this the judgment....**” So there is something about this second death that you need to understand.

TWO RESURRECTIONS

Revelation 20:6 Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

Here the second death means something more than just being destroyed or dying. That is why you need to understand that these individuals will be **"...priests of God."** They will be those who will rule with Christ – as it says: **"...and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years."**

John 5:25-29 ²⁵Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. ²⁶For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself; ²⁷And hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. ²⁸Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, ²⁹And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

This critical section of text ties in with Revelation 20 and The First Resurrection. This is The First Resurrection, and THE SECOND DEATH HAS NO POWER: ²⁶**For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he**

given to the Son to have life in himself; ²⁷And hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man.”

In Chapter 8 – Marriage, The Great Mystery, you have read that marriage concerns The Jubilee Year. God is making Christians become ONE with Him through marriage. You are to be Redeemed by your Savior before The Jubilee. When does everyone else get RESURRECTED? It is at The Jubilee. There is a big difference.

If you are Redeemed, it means that you are removed from slavery – ahead of time. During The Jubilee Year, the remainder will be set at liberty (released). When Jesus Christ first came, He said that He Judges no man. He also said that His Father has given all Judgment to Him. These are two different responsibilities. When Christ came as The Messiah, He came as The Groom for His Bride (The Jews) or in The Judgment as Judge.

John, The Baptizer prepared The Way – fulfilling the role of the best man (John 3). But The Israelites (The Jews), who were fulfilling the role of The Bride, rejected Him. They said, “No,” to the marriage. Christ then went to The Gentile world, calling them to become Christians – or His Bride. Since The Israelites (The Jews) rejected Christ, The Gentiles had their opportunity to be ahead of The Israelites. At that time, Christ started to build His Church.

Christ Redeemed The Church by buying Her with His Life. As Savior and Redeemer, He was purchasing Her before The Jubilee Year – or Year of Release (Leviticus 25). When He becomes Judge, and judgment is given

to Him, there is no time to buy anyone back. The fifty years are up. It will, then, be The Time of The "Release."

TIME OF JUDGMENT

Pagans think The Day of Judgment is a horrible time. But The Day of Judgment is a wonderful occasion. The word "damnation," when referring to The Lake of Fire is an English translation. By translating The Greek word to "damnation," people believe they go into The Lake of Fire and burn forever.

The word for "judgment" is "krisis," which in Greek means "critical" or "crises." But its root means a "turning point" or a "change." When Christ comes as Redeemer and Savior before the end of The Jubilee (or end time), He Redeems you (Job 19:26). Christ, as Redeemer, must buy you ahead of time with His very Life.

But once The Jubilee Year (The Marriage Feast) is complete, and The Time of Redemption is over, then Christ becomes The Judge. He decides who is punished – and for how much time. Do you remember the parable of the penny and the laborers? In Jesus' parable, the householder hired laborers, some in the early morning, and some at the eleventh hour. But He gave them all just one penny.

Some individuals became angry. Some didn't like the idea that a few worked longer – and received the same amount of money as those who worked for a shorter period of time (Matthew 20). There is a big difference in Christ's responsibilities as Redeemer, Savior, and Judge.

The “krisis” or “turning point” is a significant time for The Jubilee Release of all the others. All are Saved or Released (I John 4:14), which is The Real Purpose of The Lake of Fire.

The next Resurrection in John 5 is: “²⁸**Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice,** ²⁹**And shall come forth; they that have done good unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.**” This is The Judgment. It is “krisis,” which is the same Greek word you just read. They are not damned. But, rather it is their “turning point.”

How many resurrections exist in The Second Resurrection? There is only one. Some people believe there are two resurrections. Some people believe that The Resurrection of Life is one resurrection – and there is a 100-year period of time for them, which is followed by a third resurrection. But this is not so. There are not three resurrections.

Notice these words specified earlier: “²⁸**Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all [not two more resurrections] that are in the graves shall hear his voice.**” So there are only TWO RESURRECTIONS. The first one takes place before The Millennium, and the second one happens after The Millennium. The Second Resurrection has two divisions. It has A Resurrection of those people who are Resurrected to receive Life. Then, the rest are thrown into The Lake of Fire.

THE FIRST RESURRECTION

For The First Resurrection, The Church is Redeemed and Saved. Then The Second Resurrection comes 1,000 years later. This is the 11th hour Redemption. There is no redemption for anyone else. Now, it is time to learn from another perspective about these events. This comes from continued study in The Book of Revelation.

Revelation 20:7-15 ⁷And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, ⁸And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. ⁹And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them. ¹⁰And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever. ¹¹And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. ¹²And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to

their works. ¹³And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. ¹⁴And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. ¹⁵And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.

THE SECOND DEATH

How many deaths are appointed to individuals? There is only one (Hebrew 9:27). One death is physical. This would mean that the “second death” must be a different type of death. The text in Revelation 20:7 shows that: “⁷...when the thousand years are expired, Satan will be loosed out of his prison [Tartaroo, Satan's Hell], ⁸And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth....”

Then, these armies of God and Magog surround New Jerusalem. But God destroys Jerusalem's enemies: “⁹And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them.”

Now, what happens: ¹⁰And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone [“brimstone” has a great meaning], where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.” The words “for ever and ever” in the Greek language really means “ages and ages.”

It does not mean eternity – but just continuation during an “age” or period. Then, these rebellious ones are tormented. No one knows how long this will take, but you do know that the beast and false prophet are thrown into The Fire. So 1,000 years go by, and this Lake of Fire is still around. Does that mean they will burn for 1,000 years? The Bible does not reveal that, but probably they will not. Why throw Satan in The Lake of Fire if he is A Spirit and cannot die?

Look what is revealed to John: **“¹²And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.”** Did you know that God has a report card for every human being He has ever created?

What is the reason for counting every little thing? If a person is no good, then he is no good. He is either good, or he is bad. He is either a sheep, or a goat. So all that is needed – is to throw the bad ones into The Lake of Fire. Isn't that what Christ said? Those who refuse to repent or grow Spiritually will go directly into The Fire. Isn't that right? **“¹³And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.”** This shows that there is only one resurrection.

Christ said: **“Marvel not at this because the hour is coming when all who are in the graves”** (John 5:28). In Revelation 20:12-13 do you find that each person is in a resurrection? Look at this: **“¹⁴And death and hell**

were cast into the lake of fire.” Hell is “Hades” – or the “grave and death” – which is the “absence” of Life.

THE TORTURE OF DEATH

The dead are thrown into The Lake of Fire. Is God going to torture death and the grave? How does God torture death? There are two types of deaths, but only one death has been “reserved,” which is the physical death. With regards to THE SECOND DEATH, IT CANNOT BE A DEATH. So are the pagans correct – or are they in error?

Do people burn forever and ever? How can that be death if it is only reserved (appointed) for men to die once? Look at that text again: **“¹⁴And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. ¹⁵And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.”**

The Book of Life is a marriage registry. In Chapter 8 – “Marriage, The Great Mystery,” you witnessed that The Lamb's Book of Life is nothing more than the story of Jesus becoming worthy to be The Groom and Savior. He brings His Wife (The Church), and makes Her ready. Then He prepares Her for The Wedding (along with The Guests). That relates to this text, which says: **“¹⁵And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.”**

The people who go to The Wedding Feast are the ones who are written in The Book of Life. The sequence is this: Christ is The Groom and The Husband, The Bride is The Church, and The Guests are attendants. The

last verse tells that many are called, but few are chosen. So, where do the majority go?

A minister once gave a message on, "Who Is Going to be Saved?" He said that he was really sorry to tell everyone that the majority is not going to be Saved. Many churches believe that the only ones to be Saved are those written in The Book of Life. The majority gets thrown into The Lake of Fire.

In studying The Scriptures, the churches can logically come to this conclusion – and agree with the old pagan teaching that most will be burned up. In Daniel 7, a number is given. Approximately 100,000,000 people will be Saved. If only 100,000,000 people are saved, then billions of others will be lost. Hebrew 9:27 states that human beings will only die once.

PUNISHMENT OF STRIPES

Luke 12:42-48 ⁴²And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season? ⁴³Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. ⁴⁴Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath. ⁴⁵But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken; ⁴⁶The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not

for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. ⁴⁷And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. ⁴⁸But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

In Verse 42, you find the Lord will appoint a ruler who will have "Life," and will give them their portion. The word "portion" in the Greek is "meros." It can, also, be translated "part." These individuals will receive their "portion" or "their part" of meat in due season.

The result is: **"⁴³Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing."** Now, the main point: **"⁴⁴Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath."** This is The First Resurrection. This is the good result.

Now, you are informed about a different type of result. **"⁴⁵But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and maidens..."** This is about those who do not have God's Law written in their hearts. This means: **"⁴⁶The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him..."**

PARABLE OF VIRGINS

The parable of the virgins fits in here. Five were wise and five were not. So the door was closed on the five who were not wise. Realize that all this happens **“...at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him [meros] his portion [his part] with [whom?] the unbelievers.”**

The word for “unbelievers” in the Greek is “apistos.” The exact Greek meaning also indicates what portion they receive: **“⁴⁷And that servant, which knew his lord’s will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.”** You learn some will be beaten with many stripes and will get a portion with the unbelievers. **“⁴⁸But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes.”**

This is the time when everyone who did not know Christ will receive stripes that are in direct proportion to how much they understood and followed God’s teaching. Either that, or it will be to the degree to which they had sinned. Those who did not know about God, and who died as babies, will only see or feel a small amount of the heat of the Fire. They will change quickly.

II Peter 3:8 But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.

Some churches believe The Judgment Period is 100 years in length, and some tout a 1,000 year period, as the verse above indicates. This is the “krisis,” or “the turning point.”

Luke 12:48 But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

Those who did not know Christ at all will receive a small penalty. Much will be expected of people with more Godly knowledge, teaching, and understanding. Individuals with less ability – or with little knowledge of Christ – means that less will be expected from them. Depending on the amount of Truth you have along with your level of Christianity, you will become responsible to follow those Truths.

CHRISTIANS AND NON-CHRISTIANS

Humans who are not Christians will die and be Resurrected. They will still pay, but with fewer stripes. If, however, you know a great deal of Bible Truth, and you do nothing with it, then you will pay with many more stripes. This divides The Christians from the unbelievers. In other words, a “larger” Judgment will be placed upon The Christians than on the unbelievers.

The sobering thought is that what you as Christians leave as a witness before you die, will determine how many stripes you will eventually

obtain. Christians who refuse to grow Spiritually will receive more punishment – which means more stripes.

Revelation 21:7-8 ⁷**He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.**
⁸**But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.**

The unbelieving had better beware. The word “Apistos” for “unbeliever” is the same Greek word as in Luke 12. They are grouped with: “...**the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have** [“meros” or their “portion”] **their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.**”

The stripes are reserved for those burning. It is so they can be purified as in purifying gold (I Corinthians 3:13-15). Most will be required to go into The Lake of Fire, but the hardest judgment will be against Christians who refused to grow with the knowledge they were given and understood. Only a few guests are picked for The Wedding (Matthew 22:14). So why does God have The Lake of Fire – and what is its PURPOSE?

PURPOSE OF THE LAKE OF FIRE

Matthew 3:7-11 ⁷**But when he saw many of the**

Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? ⁸Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance: ⁹And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of theses stones to raise up children unto Abraham. ¹⁰And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. ¹¹I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire:

Follow each step carefully. Don't miss one point or you will miss a good portion of the puzzle. **⁷But when he [John, The Baptizer] saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers [Satan is a serpent, viper, snake], who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?**

There are many people who believe they are True Christians by following The Law of Moses. The Sadducees and Pharisees were the seed of Abraham and were circumcised. They were part of The Promise.

Both groups thought they were doing just fine in God's sight, but they were not perceived by God in that "light." Remember that The Law was just to bring them to Christ (repentance). After that, The Works of The Law were no longer needed.

The depth and purpose for The Lake of Fire is now revealed: **“¹⁰And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees:...”** Mind you, this is not just chopping trees down, but demolishing the root, which is the very Life, the very flesh. The fire changes their hearts. This equates to a True Repentance. It is a change in The Spirit in man, down to the root.

ACTING SWEET & DOING GOOD

Acting sweet, and doing good doesn't necessarily make you a Christian. It must be a change in nature: **“¹⁰...therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.”** There are two hells here: (#1) hell (grave) and (#2) gehenna (The Lake of Fire). The Greek word for fire in verse 10 is “pur,” “pore” or “pure.” The English word, “pure” or “purify” comes from the Greek word for “fire.”

So: **“...every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.”** This is purification. John tells about his form of baptism compared to the form of the one who will follow him. John says: **“...he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost [Spirit], and with fire.”** The Lake of Fire is also a baptism. Remember, there are three baptisms: (#1) a baptism by water, (#2) the baptism of the Holy Spirit, and (#3) the baptism by fire. What is The Purpose of a baptism?

Acts 2:38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Peter gave the sermon on The Day of Pentecost. This was the time of The Jubilee, and all were speaking in tongues (interpreting in the different languages), so that each nationality could understand Peter's teachings. Then Peter told them to repent and be baptized. This was an urgent message.

The Purpose of Baptism is to repent of sins: (#1) baptized by water represents the death of your sins – which are being washed away; (#2) baptized by The Holy Spirit cleanses your sins, which leads to truth; (#3) baptized by fire causes repentance and purification of sins: “...and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost [Spirit].”

DEAD WORKS

Hebrew 6:1 Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God,

Paul explains the basic doctrines of Christianity: “¹**not laying again the foundation [doctrine] of repentance from dead works...**” For any human effort to make yourself righteous, God identifies as “dead works.” To be right with God takes REPENTANCE, not dead works. Religious works do not change you or anyone else. You must become as a little child.

Repentance is asking God to change you. “Repentance” in the Greek means “a change of mind.” The Apostle Paul said that he kept The Law

blameless, and he counted it all as Dung (Philippians 3:8). There is nothing you or anyone can do on a religious basis that can change you. Repentance from dead works is just the beginning principle, or the first step on the ladder to Christ. This is not strong meat. Strong meat comes later.

After repentance from dead works, three baptisms can take place: (#1) Water, (#2) Holy Spirit, (#3) Fire. Water washes away your sins, but it can never change you. When The Israelites left Egypt (a picture of sin), they had a form of water baptism by going through the sea. That was their symbolic baptism, and repentance was not required (although circumcision was necessary). They had their sins overlooked, so that when they reached Sinai, God was to be their God.

There is another example. At the time of Noah when the world became entirely evil, – so that every thought was nothing but evil continually – God did baptize (by flooding) the whole world. In this way, He cleansed the world from sin (see: Genesis 6). But there was NO REPENTANCE. In like manner, when Israel went through the wilderness, the whole generation rebelled against God and ended up dying in that wilderness.

A new generation came up who were, also, baptized when they crossed The Jordan River. They went into The Promised Land, but there was No Repentance there either. The message was purified when John, The Baptist came and said: “**Repent.**” Remember that he was preparing “the way” for Christ. You must have a change of mind, and then you will receive The Holy Spirit. This is in addition to the water washing away your sins.

BAPTISM OF HOLY SPIRIT

Acts 2:1-3 ¹And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. ²And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. ³And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them.

You can be baptized, but it will not nor can you make yourself perfect. You cannot make yourself Righteous. It will never happen. No religious works can change you. As much as you may try, you cannot change what you are. That is why your Husband (Christ) after He marries His Church at Passover said The Apostles would need to wait until The Day of Pentecost – so He could give The Gift of The Holy Spirit.

The Scripture explains The Holy Spirit. Remember the Greek word for “fire” is “pur” meaning “pure” or “purify.” The Purpose of The Holy Spirit is to purify. The result was that the baptism of The Holy Spirit. **“³...sat upon each of them.”**

The participants spoke in foreign tongues because speaking in tongues is The Gift that God gives to His Church to explain Christ's teachings to the unbelievers in their language. They discovered The Truth in their own native tongue. There was no need to speak in tongues for the believers who already understood the language (I Corinthians 14).

Hebrews 4:12 For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

The root of the tree burns and purifies each person down to his individual spirit. The Holy Spirit is like a fire which cleanses all that it touches.

John 14: 16-17 ¹⁶And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; ¹⁷Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

FIRE PURIFIER

Christ had to give you that Gift. Christ told The Disciples that He was going to leave this earth to be with His Father. But He was going to send another Comforter. The Holy Spirit is a fire purifier, and is also Truth. God's Spirit in you reveals Truth through God's Word, which is sharper than a two-edged sword, which cuts right down to the soul and spirit. I Corinthians 15 and Hebrews 12 tell the whole story about The Lake of Fire. It is imperative that you study these accounts.

Matthew 5:27-30 ²⁷Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: ²⁸But I say

unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. ²⁹And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell. ³⁰And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

Jesus Christ explains further about The Lake of Fire. You now know the type of RIGHTEOUSNESS that Christians must have. You are not dealing with The Law of Moses here, but with The Royal Law. The Law you are now under is The Royal Law – not The Law of Moses.

The Law of Moses is for unconverted people to bring them to Christ. Study Galatians 3:10-13, and I Timothy 1:9. Now concerning the words “the right eye,” Christ is dividing human nature in this example. He uses “an eye” as a metaphor for sin. Christ is talking about the different parts of sin within your nature. It needs to be “plucked out.” This must happen to prevent you from being cast into Gehenna.

When you become a witness of Christ, His Ambassador, it means you have come to the place where you are willing to give up your life, and are willing to put to death anything that is in your human nature. This is not martyrdom. Paul said in I Corinthians 13:3, “**...though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity [agape], it profiteth me nothing.**”

You need a change of nature. God is asking if you are willing to give up your way of doing things, even if you are doing what you think is right. When you repent, you have a change of heart toward God, and you determine to put your human nature to death.

I Corinthians 3:1-5 ¹And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal, even as unto babes in Christ. ²I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able to bear it, neither yet now are ye able. ³For ye are yet carnal: for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men? ⁴For while one saith, I am of Paul; and another, I am of Apollos; are ye not carnal? ⁵Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos, but ministers by whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to every man?

You can be babes in Christ while still retaining your carnal nature. But what reveals that people still have carnal nature? It is when they are fed with milk – and not meat

I Corinthians 3:6-15 ⁶I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase. ⁷So then neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth; but God that giveth the increase. ⁸Now he that planteth and he that watereth are one: and every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labour. ⁹For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's husbandry, ye are God's building. ¹⁰According to the grace of God which is given

unto me, as a wise masterbuilder, I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon. ¹¹For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ. ¹²Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; ¹³Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is. ¹⁴If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. ¹⁵If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; ye so as by fire.

Paul was first on the scene – and he planted. Apollos came along later, and did help to tend to the growing plants. But only God gave the increase. No one, but God, can change you.

All this addresses ministers and along with everyone else. Paul tells you he was more diligent than all the others. He was like a wise masterbuilder. He accurately stated God revealed more to him as he dealt with The Church, and, also, with The Gentiles. Peter, on the other hand, spent his time with The Israelites. Paul said: **“I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.”** It is a fearful thing when you think of what ministers preach, and it is, also, fearful to contemplate how you live your Christian life.

PLUCK OUT AN EYE?

They, now, had the foundation, but were still carnal. They were just babes in Christ. They weren't willing to pluck out "the eye." They weren't willing to cut off "the arm." They weren't willing to kill their carnal nature. A preacher should worry about what he preaches. A person who claims to be a Christian should be concerned about what he believes and the very way he lives his life. This is because: **"...the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire...."**

If only an eye has caused you to sin, you might burn for a short time. If, in your lifetime, you have given more of your body over to sin, then you will burn longer, which means more stripes, since: **"...the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is."** Is your nature changing? Are you growing Spiritually – or not? Your goal should be what Matthew 5:48 tells you.

You must strive to become Perfect, and do it in this lifetime. **"¹⁵If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward."** The Church gets the role of performing as Judge and Ruler. **"If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss:"** "An eye" or "an arm" might have to go **"...but he himself shall be saved;"** It is The Baptism of Fire that Saves him.

I Corinthians 5:4-5 ⁴In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, ⁵To deliver such an one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh,

that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus. (Judgment).

In I Corinthians 5, during The Days of Unleavened Bread, Paul is chastising the people for allowing a fornicator in their company. He told them they should keep The Feast by the observance of what the day means, in sincerity and truth, and by not sinning. Paul commanded The Church to expel this man – and deliver him to Satan

Satan helps God whether he wants to or not. Paul is saying to give this sinner: “...unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh...” Everything in the flesh (i.e., human nature) and all that is corruptible, must burn. You either do it willingly with The Gift of The Purification of The Holy Spirit through God – or you are going to burn.

The reason for this is: “...that the spirit may be saved in the day of the **Lord Jesus.**” Paul stated this in I Corinthians 3. The flesh and its works are going to be destroyed while The Spirit is going to be Saved. This means the second death is something else, as you shall shortly see.

THE SECOND DEATH

Jude 1:6-13 ⁶And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day. ⁷Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set

forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire. ⁸Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities. ⁹Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee. ¹⁰But these speak evil of those things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves. ¹¹Woe unto them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core. ¹²These are spots in your feasts of charity when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots; ¹³Raging waves of the sea, foaming out of their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.

Jude is describing the people who must go into The Lake of Fire. He is warning them with these fearsome words: “⁶...**the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation....**” These angels didn't follow God, but followed Satan instead. This is why “**...he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day.**”

SODOM & GOMORRAH

Then Sodom and Gomorrah are cited as extreme negative examples among human kind. The Purpose of The Fire is an example of Purification. Christ says that it will be more tolerable in The Judgment for those of Sodom and Gomorrah (who will be saved), than for The Sadducees and Pharisees. Sodom and Gomorrah show an example of The Lake of Fire.

You must respect authority. This applies to the rulers of this world even though they may not be good. But God allows them to be in charge. That is a part of your Christianity. **“Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee.”** Demons are more powerful than you, so you must ask God, in the name of Jesus Christ, to protect you. Remember, Satan is more powerful than Michael, The Archangel.

Check the examples of Cain and Balaam. Cain was a murderer and Balaam took a bribe. He was paid to curse Israel. It was a bribe when he took money for telling The Truth. And God looks upon ministers in the same way who take money from their flock. Next, is Korah, who told Moses and Aaron that they were taking too much authority upon themselves, and ended up being burned.

Jude says: **“¹²These are spots in your feasts of charity when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without**

water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots....”

This is exactly what John said Christ would do. These are: “¹³**Raging waves of the sea, foaming out of their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.**” There are two deaths. This involves the whole root. Everything will be thrown into The Lake of Fire. Spirit beings will, also, feel the torment from The Fire.

I Corinthians 15:1-13 ¹Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye stand; ²By which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory what I preached unto you, unless ye have believed in vain. ³For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; ⁴And that he was buried, and he rose again the third day according to the scriptures; ⁵And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve: ⁶After that, he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once; of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep. ⁷After that, he was seen of James; then of all the apostles. ⁸And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time. ⁹For I am the least of the apostles that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God. ¹⁰But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace

which was bestowed upon me was not in vain; but I laboured more abundantly than they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me. ¹¹Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed. ¹²Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead? ¹³But if there be no resurrection of dead, then is Christ not risen:

When Paul said he worked more fervently than the other Apostles. He related: **"...yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me. ¹¹Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed."**

NO RESURRECTION?

To the main point: **"¹²Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead?"** The subject from here forward is The Resurrection of The Dead. The lead-in is: **"¹³But if there be no resurrection of dead, then is Christ not risen:"**

I Corinthians 15:19-26 ¹⁹If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable. ²⁰But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the first fruits of them that slept. ²¹For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. ²²For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. ²³But

every man in his own order: Christ the first fruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming. ²⁴Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. ²⁵For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet. ²⁶The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.

Beginning in verses 19-20, notice that Paul identifies death as being compared to sleep. But, this is not a permanent sleep. **²¹For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead.** So, if you died in Adam, you have Life in Christ. The key point: **²²For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.** Everyone shall eventually receive Eternal Life. How clear do you want it to be? Paul said the same thing in I Timothy 2:3-4. Peter, also, said that God is: ***"...not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance..."*** (II Peter 3:9).

The subject above says ***"...as in Adam..."*** that every human being was reserved (appointed) once to die (Hebrews 9:27) – but ***"...in Christ shall all be made alive..."*** So everyone will be made alive. The second death cannot be death. This is not "death" as you know it. **²³...But every man in his own order....** You must get the sequence! It follows with: ***"...Christ the first fruits...."***

First, Jesus was resurrected as The Son of God, then: ***"...afterward they that are Christ's at his coming."*** This continues with John 5:25 and Revelation 20:6: ***"...blessed are those who are in the first resurrection***

because upon them there is no second death.” The final part is now introduced with the words: **“²⁴Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power.”**

What is it that He must put down? The answer is: **“²⁵For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet. ²⁶The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.”** So death will no longer exist. Christ's last job before He turns The Kingdom over to God, The Father, is to abolish death. For death to be abolished, no one can be dead.

Isaiah 59:1-2 ¹Behold, the Lord's hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear: ²But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.

God does not sin. God cannot sin, and He cannot be around sin. Satan can come before God's throne – even though he is a sinner. Why is this? It is because Satan is a spirit being. Yes, he can appear before God. **“¹Behold, the Lord's hand is not shortened [is God a liar?], ²But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.”** It is the conduct of the individual that makes the separation.

WHY GOD HIDES HIS FACE

God hides His face from you because of your sins. Everyone has sinned

(Romans 3:21). No one will ever see God until there is no sin in anyone. Christ confirms that you have: **“...never heard or seen the Father.”** That, also, means at Mount Sinai.

Moses did not see God. As noted earlier, in Acts 7, Stephen states that it was an angel in the burning bush. God comes to The New Earth and New Heaven after sin and death are abolished by Christ (I Corinthians 15:26; Revelation 21:22).

I Corinthians 13:11-12 ¹¹When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things. ¹²For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.

That can happen only when you are without sin. You will see God face-to-face when you have no sin. No minister and no Christian have all The Truth. If a minister says he has all The Truth, then he is a liar. The best anyone can do is to know “in part.”

I Corinthians 15:26-28 ²⁶The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. ²⁷For he hath put all things under his feet. But when he saith all things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted, which did put all things under him. ²⁸And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be

**subject unto him that put all things under him, that
God may be all in all.**

Death is the last thing to be subdued under Christ. If death is removed, then sin is, also, gone. SO, EVERYONE WILL LIVE. One of the laws of physics is the law of diminishing returns. All things must die. Everything is corruptible. That is the law of diminishing returns. Not only do humans die, but also stars die. When some stars die, they are called black holes. Finally, they burn themselves out.

God does not live in this universe. God is not going to return until Christ puts sin to death. When Christ puts all corruption to death, only then will God come. Then you will be able to see Him face-to-face. God's Kingdom is a Spiritual Kingdom – not a corruptible kingdom, which can burn.

I Corinthians 15:33-37 ³³Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners. ³⁴Awake to righteousness, and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame. ³⁵But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come? ³⁶Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die: ³⁷And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain:

Now what happens in The Lake of Fire? Paul continues to talk about what Apostles go through. In Verse 32, Paul said that he fought with beasts at

Ephesus. **“³³Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners. ³⁴Awake to righteousness, and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame.”**

TO BE QUICKENED

In the beginning of I Corinthians 3, these people were carnal in nature. To be quickened is to be “energized” or “made alive.” That is a more understandable perspective than the word “quicken. Heavenly things have a different glory than all things which are earthly.

I Corinthians 15:47-53 ⁴⁷The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven. ⁴⁸As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. ⁴⁹And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly. ⁵⁰Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. ⁵¹Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, ⁵²In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. ⁵³For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality.

Remember what Christ said about “the eye.” If your eye offends you, then

get rid of it! Whatever is fleshly and is of a carnal nature, you must get rid of it. Only The Spiritual must stay.

THE MYSTERY

Paul said: “⁵¹**Behold I shew you a mystery...**” If these individuals go into The Lake of Fire, will they have to be Resurrected? The answer: “**We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed....**” So this is not a Resurrection. There is no need for another Resurrection. Something happens in that Lake of Fire that does not require a Resurrection.

In I Thessalonians 4 regarding The Resurrection of The Church, you find there is another time like this. Those who are alive when Christ returns will be Resurrected to meet Him in the clouds. This includes those who are dead. The event is described as: “⁵²**In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump....**” This is for The Church. “**...for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.**”

There is no Resurrection, and he tells you why: “⁵³**...For this corruptible [this human body] must put on incorruption [a spiritual body]....**” What does this mean? Scientists, such as Stephen Hawking, are working on other universe theories in other dimensions where the laws of physics do not apply as they do here on earth.

God says there are three heavens – and He is in the third heaven (the first heaven is the atmosphere, the second is the universe, and the third is another universe). It is a non-Euclidean universe, meaning that the

universe is not static, as some scientists think ours is. There are no deaths in the third universe. Nothing in that universe can die. It is an incorruptible universe. Scientifically, it is another dimension. It is a Spiritual One, and not a carbon-based dimension.

I Corinthians 15:54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory.

This is another period of time when the question of death is answered. This text is not talking about The First Resurrection. The conclusion is: **“Death is swallowed up in victory.”** Christ ends death.

HOW DOES CHRIST END DEATH?

How does Christ bring an end to death? He changes everything that is corruptible into incorruptible. That is the reason there is no resurrection. The resurrection happens in The Lake of Fire, but it is not a resurrection per se, because it is a change from corruptible to incorruptible.

Hebrews 12:1-16 ¹Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, ²Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right

hand of the throne of God. ³For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds. ⁴Ye have not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin. ⁵And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him: ⁶For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. ⁷If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chastened not? ⁸But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons. ⁹Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? ¹⁰For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness. ¹¹Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby. ¹²Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees; ¹³And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way; but let it rather be healed. ¹⁴Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord:

¹⁵Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled; ¹⁶Lest there be any fornicator, or profane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birthright.

Hebrews 12 and I Corinthians 15 are the two main chapters on this subject. God reveals an amazing message to you. Hebrews 12 tells you why there must be a Lake of Fire. It is a baptism.

Now, if it is a baptism, it purges sin, and when there is no sin, there is no death. Hebrews 12 tells you that all the people of God have to endure. **“¹Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight....”**

This is encouraging because whatever happens in your Christian lives, no matter how much pain, sorrow, torture, or being burned – you must lay it aside as: **“...the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, ²Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith....”**

Christ is The Finisher because He was victorious over death. He is The Beginner and The Finisher. He does it all. Much is accomplished through adversity, as it says: **⁵...ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him: ⁶For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth....”**

LENGTH OF STAY IN THE LAKE OF FIRE

How long do individuals remain in The Lake of Fire? It will be only long enough to insure the right result. This is so that success is guaranteed. This is applied to: **“...every son whom he receiveth.”** If you don't go into Fire, you are not one of His. **“⁷If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? ⁸But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards and not sons. ...”** That quotation means there is no Inheritance. **“¹¹Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.”** What does God's Holy Spirit do? Christ ascended and is able to give you The Holy Spirit as a Comforter. After you are changed by The Word of God and scourged, then you receive the peaceable fruit of RIGHTEOUSNESS, which is your Comforter. **“¹²Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees; ¹³And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way; but let it rather be healed. ¹⁴Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord: ¹⁵Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled....”** Hebrews 12:18-21 **¹⁸For ye are not come unto the mount that might be touched, and that burned with fire, nor unto blackness, and darkness, and tempest, ¹⁹And the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words; which voice they that heard intreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more:**

²⁰(For they could not endure that which was commanded, And if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart: ²¹And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake:)

MOUNTAIN OF FIRE

There is a particular mountain that burned with fire. This story is about the children of Israel at Mount Sinai. In Exodus 24, as they approached God at Mount Sinai, the angel in place of God spoke to them (Acts 7). Moses asked, **“Who shall I say sent me”** when he was to go to the Pharaoh. The angel said, **“Tell them ‘I AM’ sent you,”** speaking in the place of God.

There is an angel of God who speaks as “the messenger” from God. Why were the angels created? The angels were created as messengers. No man has seen The Father or heard His voice at any time. But via angels, you receive The Word of God. The flames of fire were so glorious that Moses was exceedingly quaking. The Scriptures tell you that there was a consuming fire at that time. That is why the children of Israel did not want to come near. They knew they would be completely consumed.

There is another example in Daniel 3 where Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego were thrown into the fire furnace, but it didn't burn anyone. There was a fourth being, a messenger or an angel for their protection. They did not burn because there was no sin. They were sinless. They didn't need to burn. Their Faith Saved them!

GOD IS LIKE A LAKE OF FIRE

Hebrews 12:29 For our God is a consuming fire.

God cannot show Himself to humans. He burns all who are not Spirit. When He descends, His Glory (a consuming fire) scourges every Son He loves.

Isaiah 30:33 For Tophet is ordained of old; yea, for the king it is prepared; he hath made it deep and large: the pile thereof is fire and much wood; the breath of the Lord, like a stream of brimstone, doth kindle it.

If God showed Himself, then everything would be consumed which works by the corruptible laws of physics. Remember Tophet, which is a little village in the valley of Hinnom – or The Valley of Fire. This is where they burned their children to Baalam and to Molek. In contrast, God makes brimstone in The Lake of Fire.

Revelation 21:8 But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolators, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

The Greek root for “brimstone” is “Godly” or “Divine.” Brimstone is “Holy Fire.” In Isaiah 30 it was God's breath that caused this Godly brimstone. Sulfur has always been recognized as holy in much of the

Pagan world. The Lake of Fire came from God, and it was caused by God to do what? It was to bring an end to death.

Revelation 20:14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.

The second death is the end of death. The Purpose for The Lake of Fire is to end death. Everyone who is burned is completely purged – and goes through a baptism. All come to repentance, as with Lazarus and the Rich man (Luke 16:19-31). Fire cleanses. It purifies all – and what remains is pure Spirit, which is The Purpose of The Lake of Fire.

God, as your Father, chastises everyone, so that all can be Saved. God truly is love. That is why Christ came to the world (I John 4:14). Christ came to SAVE THE WORLD – AND TO END SIN AND DEATH. Christ will come again, out of God's great love for everyone to be SAVED, according to each person's works! He will either Redeem (buy back) or Release (Judge you), showcasing God's wonderful love and mercy. God allows no one to die. GOD, BY HIS GRACE AND MERCY, SAVES EVERYONE, THROUGH HIS SON, JESUS CHRIST.

CHAPTER 14

GOD'S KINGDOM

The True Gospel is The Good News of The Kingdom of God. This is a Spiritual Kingdom, which means that flesh and blood cannot inherit this realm (I Corinthians 15). It is composed of Spirit Beings, who live in a different universe, and in a different dimension. What better goal could you have, than learning The Good News about becoming a Son of God – and to be able to live with God?

All these statements will mean that you will be given the fantastic opportunity to create beyond man's comprehension. You will never need to worry about death. You will not experience pain or suffering.

You might ask: "What are Spirit Beings going to do in God's Kingdom, and what is The Purpose of The Kingdom of God?" Too many times Christians concentrate on just being Saved. No one wants to be thrown into The Lake of Fire. No one wants to burn.

When you are concerned about wanting to be Saved, you tend not to think about what The Kingdom of God will be like. God is reproducing

Himself. He is creating Sons. He is building a family into a Godly Family Government.

COMMERCE & PROSPERITY?

Will there be commerce? Will everyone be prosperous? Will you eat quality foods, live in wondrous homes, and work in beautiful offices? Or will you just play games as you did during childhood? What will be the most important goal that God will have set before you?

Genesis 22:15-18 ¹⁵And the angel of the Lord called unto Abraham out of heaven the second time, ¹⁶And said, By myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son: ¹⁷That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies; ¹⁸And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice.

Abraham and The Abrahamic Covenant form the underlying basis of The Gospel – which is The Good News of The Kingdom of God. Through an angel, God told Abraham, very specifically, what would take place in His Kingdom. Abraham offered his son Isaac as a sacrifice, and then God intervened to stop it. An animal was sacrificed in Isaac's place. Here is the account: **“¹⁵And the angel of the Lord called unto Abraham out of heaven the second time.”**

The Bible shows you that no one has really talked to God. In Genesis 12, Elohim, God Almighty – who is The Universal God – talked to Abraham. But it was really an angel, who: ¹⁶“...said, **“By myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son....”** This angel is speaking in the place of God – and for God. He speaks in God's name – and on God's behalf.

It is important to remember the aspect of duality in The Bible. First you have the physical type – which is Isaac being physically offered as a type of Christ. This was pointing to the time when Christ would give Himself as a sacrifice – just as there is the physical Law of Moses coming first – and then, afterward, The Spiritual Law being written in your hearts: ¹⁷**“That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed....”**

The sacrifice was made. Now look at the magnitude to follow. How many stars are there? How many galaxies are there? It continues with the words: **“...as the stars of the heaven, as the sand....”** This is how much God will multiply Abraham's seed.

Has anyone counted up all the grains of sand bit by bit? This is the sand: **“...which is upon the sea shore....”** These are all the seashores of the earth. That Promise is followed with: **“...and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies; ¹⁸And in thy seed [speaking of Christ] shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice.”**

Until this happens, The Good News of The Gospel has not come to pass. You will find, when you examine The Lake of Fire, most people will have been thrown into it. This is because of their sins.

Until all nations are blessed, the realization of The Gospel Message has not been complete. It is very plain. Finally, all the mystery, or God's puzzle, will be revealed in God's Kingdom (Revelation 10:7).

Ephesians 1:9-10 ⁹Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he hath purposed in himself: ¹⁰That in the dispensation of the fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him:

The process starts to unfold. Speaking of The Church at Ephesus, Paul says: “⁹**Having made known unto us the mystery of his will....**” It is God's Will to Save everyone. God will do this: “**...according to his good pleasure** [note: TO SAVE EVERYONE, gives Him pleasure] **which he has purposed in himself....**”

This is The Word of God: “**In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God and the Word was God**” (John 1:1). He purposed it in Himself. It was all within His Mind. It was His pleasure to bless all nations. There are so many individuals, that you would have to count all the little grains of sand, or be able to count all the stars in the heavens.

RELATIVITY OF TIME

In His Kingdom, and to His family, there will be no end. This is why it reads: “¹⁰...**in the dispensation of the fullness of times...**” With God there is no time, so in The New Testament you read of “dispensation.” Another word would be “ages” or “eons” – or even “time period.” Realize that “time” is just a series of events. Without events, there is no time. There must be an event in order to measure a beginning to an end.

When all these events transpire, God may gather together all things into one. Now again, consider that everyone is Saved! This result is part of The Abrahamic Covenant.

In Genesis 22, all nations must be blessed through Christ: “**...of the fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ both which are [where?] in heaven, and which are on earth; even in him.**” Christ and God must dwell in them by His Spirit.

Paul said the same thing in I Corinthians 15:22-23. Until this actually happens, and most people are thrown into The Lake of Fire, this text leads you to only one conclusion. It is that most people must “grow” into The Kingdom of God. When the dispensation of all the times are completed, then God will gather everything together into One – in Christ.

Everyone must finally come to the place where they are growing Spiritually. That includes all of humanity! This is God's Purpose, His pleasure, and His Will. Indeed, it is His Plan.

I Corinthians 15:22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

You must understand this text in the light of God's Kingdom. Otherwise you are going to sit there twirling your thumbs, and just looking at each other all the time. As they say, you can only eat so much steak, or you can only live in one house at a time.

MORE THAN ABUNDANCE

The Kingdom of God is far more than abundance. That is only one aspect of being Saved. God reproduces children for a reason. They must become Holy, like God, **"For as in Adam all die..."** (I Corinthians 15:22). Consequently, all physical human beings will die.

Hebrews 9:27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment:

The second death is the end of death. That is The Purpose of The Lake of Fire. It is THE TERMINATION OF DEATH, as it says: **"...death is swallowed up in victory..."** (I Corinthians 15:54). But there is more. **"...Even so in Christ shall all be made alive..."** (I Corinthians 15:22).

In Ephesians 1 and Genesis 22, The Abrahamic Covenant tells you this is so: **"...His seed, Christ, all nations have to be blessed."** You would need to number the sands of the seashore or the stars of heaven to grasp how many children there will be. The tally is just too numerous to

contemplate. Therefore, what is stopping THE SALVATION OF THE WORLD (I John 4:14)?

Isaiah 59:1-2 ¹Behold, the Lord's hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear: ²But your iniquities have separated between you and your God, and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.

What is going to happen in God's Kingdom? Whenever you say that God is not going to Save someone, you are falsely thinking that God cannot Save that person or any person. But notice that: **"...the Lord's hand is not shortened, that he cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear...."** So GOD CAN ABSOLUTELY SAVE EVERYONE – under any condition.

AN OFFENDED WOMAN

Once a woman became upset when she heard the reason why people must go into The Lake of Fire. The reason is because all must come to Repentance. This notion offended her because she felt that her free choice was taken away. You still have free choice, but this is THE TIME OF JUDGMENT. As long as you have an option, you have choice. God will bring you to Repentance IN SPITE OF YOURSELF.

God never takes away your free choice. You will stay in The Lake of Fire until you have had enough. The time factor is up to you. Consider that

some horses must have their independent spirit broken – but they still have a choice (Matthew 5:25:26). So, you will endure the heat.

A child hears his mother tell him not to touch a hot stove, but he forgets and touches it. The child, all of a sudden, has to pay a penalty. Quickly, he stops. Like the child touching the hot stove, you make the choice whether you want to stay there or not.

Those thrown into The Lake of Fire will have the choice to repent – or else to continue to burn. Eventually, on an individual basis, in your own time and in your own way, you will say it is “enough.” It may depend on how “hard” your heart is. Your entire carnal nature is found in the flesh, and it must be burned up (Matthew 5:30).

What about the people in the world today who ruin their lives with drugs, alcohol, or smoking? They become addicted. When do they quit? It is usually when it hurts too much. It has been called: “bottoming out.” They almost overdose. If they drink too much, they kill someone when driving. If they smoke, they get an illness such as throat or lung cancer.

REVELATION 21

In Revelation 21, you learn about The New Heaven and New Earth, focusing on Jerusalem. You don't learn much about the rest of the world. The concentration is completely upon New Jerusalem. The rest of The New Earth must be healed (Revelation 22:2).

There must be something special about New Jerusalem in reference to the time of The New Heaven and The New Earth. This would be something that is very significant to the remainder of the world. New Jerusalem is where God chose to place His name. He, Himself, will reside there at the time of The New Heaven. It is all about Jerusalem.

Take the little puzzle pieces from The Old Testament, and the little pieces from The New Testament, and then put them together to understand this New Jerusalem. Only those who are written in The Lamb's Book of Life will live in New Jerusalem – in The Kingdom of God.

Who is in The Lamb's Book of Life? It is only those who are part of The Wedding – or The Guests. No one else is there. All the other nations are scattered throughout the rest of the earth (Revelation 21:24). All are Spirits at this time, as they have been changed (I Corinthians 15:54-55).

SIZE OF FUTURE JERUSALEM

New Jerusalem is 1,500 miles in each direction – which is an approximate distance from Chicago to New York City. It is also four square. Can you imagine one city that is 1,500 miles in each direction?

When you first look at The Kingdom of God, you will find a totally different view of The New Heaven and New Earth. A view from the Hubble Telescope reveals the magnificence and beauty of the color that is displayed in the universe.

Today, when astronauts go above 300 miles and look down, they are awed at the beauty of this planet. But this view is nothing but a shadow of the wondrous beauty that God has in store for you. Read Revelation 19 through 22 for a greater meaning of New Jerusalem.

Isaiah 60:1-3 ¹Arise, shine; for thy light is come, and the glory of the Lord is risen upon thee. ²For, behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the people: but the Lord shall arise upon thee, and his glory shall be seen upon thee. ³And the Gentiles shall come to thy light, and kings to the brightness of thy rising.

God's Purpose and pleasure IS TO BRING EVERYONE TO CHRIST. He says: "¹Arise, shine; for your light is come, and the glory of the Lord is risen upon thee." Arise and shine means "The Resurrection." Then what is The Glory of The Lord? The Hebrews (Israelites) knew that God's Presence was in The Holy Place until 70 AD when Titus came and destroyed everything.

GLORY DEPARTED THE TEMPLE

The Glory of God had already departed, knowing The Temple was going to be destroyed. So God, Himself, was not actually present. The Israelites knew The Shekinah was not a being, but rather was the essence of God (will discuss Shekinah in more detail later on). They did, indeed, know it was God's Spirit, His energy, and His Glory.

In Chapter 3 – “Who Is God?” – you found that God is made of light. Light energy, when in motion, means that the photons are in a constant state of self-perpetuating themselves. As light energy moves, it creates the color spectrum (a rainbow). To look at God straight – face-to-face – is not possible because you would burn up! His face is white as the sun, and His body glows down to the burnished brass of His feet. Remember, God actually glows! All this essence is God's Glory.

God has Seven Spirits that are before His Throne. When God projects Himself, He is “all and in all.” Everything that is today and in the future will be God. When The Bible declares the: **“¹glory of the Lord is risen upon thee,”** then the reference is about The Shekinah. This Glory is magnifying itself with all its presence.

God has eyes, ears, arms, and legs within this energy and this light. You look like Him because He made you like Him. The essence and being of God is going to cover the whole New Earth. So, no sun or moon is needed because God's Glory is there – and His Son is an exact duplicate.

“²For behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the people: but the Lord shall arise upon thee, and his glory shall be seen upon thee. ³And the Gentiles [here is The Abrahamic Covenant] shall come to thy light, and kings to the brightness of thy rising.” The light and brightness is for all the world. This light brings The Truth to Salvation.

THE END OF VIOLENCE

Isaiah 60:18 Violence shall no more be heard in thy land, wasting nor destruction within thy borders; but thou shalt call thy walls Salvation, and thy gates Praise.

From the beginning of Isaiah 58 all the way to the end of Isaiah is an intermittent story flow between The New Heaven and New Earth. This is shown in the context of The Millennium. Do not confuse the two. In some instances, God declares that He will make a New Heaven and New Earth – and then, suddenly, He changes the subject. He does the same thing in Revelation. Don't get confused by this.

At times, God talks about The Resurrection. God says: **“I am making a New Heaven and New Earth.”** Then He tells you the process, which reveals His Plan. Many times Christians confuse the process. Now in New Jerusalem, when speaking about the wall (**“thy walls Salvation”**), you read: **“...and thy gates Praise.”** It is very important to know who will be permitted to go through the gates. In this “world tomorrow” which is The Kingdom of God, what is The Purpose of The Gates? What is The Purpose of The Walls of This City?

Isaiah 62:1-4 ¹For Zion's sake will I not hold my peace, and for Jerusalem's sake I will not rest, until the righteousness thereof go forth as brightness, and the salvation thereof as a lamp that burneth. ²And the Gentiles shall see thy righteousness, and all kings thy glory: and thou shalt be called by a new name, which

the mouth of the Lord shall name. ³Thou shalt also be a crown of glory in the hand of the Lord, and a royal diadem in the hand of thy God. ⁴Thou shalt no more be termed Forsaken; neither shall thy land any more be termed Desolate: but thou shalt be called Hephzi-bah, and thy land Beulah; for the Lord delighteth in thee, and thy land shall be married.

This is the beginning of the discourse about Jerusalem. A process of Salvation continues. There is the **“brightness.”** The Purpose of New Jerusalem is to be a Light for Salvation. It will continue until RIGHTEOUSNESS goes forth. New Jerusalem's Righteousness is Zion's Righteousness. **“²...and all kings [will see] thy glory: and thou shalt be called by a new name, which the mouth of the Lord shall name.”** Revelation 22 confirms this. It informs you that when there is a New Heaven and New Earth, they will receive a new name.

This crown of Glory means God's Presence. This text refers to the responsibility that everyone will have. This will be during God's Kingdom when it becomes a New Heaven and a New Earth. It will be a city of delight: **“...and thy land shall be married....”**

Hephzibah and Beulah will be ONE (Isaiah 62:4). This is the land, New Jerusalem, and the people will be ONE. They will be married as ONE with God through God's Glory, His essence, and presence. These little pieces of the puzzle are important. If you don't follow carefully, then you can misunderstand what The Bible reveals to you.

REWARD OF THE SEVEN CHURCHES

Revelation 1:3 Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.

Who will tell you these things? You will be blessed if you read and observe the statements made in this prophecy. This verse ties in with Genesis 22, where all nations are blessed. Through an angel, Christ revealed to John things that would shortly come to pass. This letter (Revelation 1 through Revelation 22) was written to The Seven Churches, which were directly connected to what must shortly come to pass.

Revelation 2:1-4 ¹Unto the angel of the church of Ephesus write; These things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks; ²I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil: and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and are not, and hast found them liars: ³And hast borne, and hast patience, and for my name's sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted. ⁴Nevertheless I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first love.

What does John tell The Seven Churches? The seven golden candlesticks and the seven stars of the seven angels are placed over The Seven Churches. He knows how they have been doing in the process of

overcoming. These people are not yet perfected. The big problem is that they have: **“...left thy first love.”** Jesus Christ was their first Love.

EPHESIANS & CHRISTOLOGY

The Ephesian Church lost Christ in the end, and turned to paganism in Christ's name. They argued Christology. They started to develop the Trinity, and by 400 AD, The Churches of the world all believed there were three gods. It was not just one, but three gods! They lost their first love, which was Jesus. They argued whether Christ was a Son of God – or God as a second God being. They lost The Truth.

Revelation 2:7 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

Here you are told about The New Heaven and New Earth. When you are Saved in God's Kingdom, everyone will eat of The Tree of Life. Why do you need The Tree of Life if you already have Salvation. If you are already Spirit and you are already Saved, then why is The Tree of Life there?

As a Spirit Being, you are going to be eating from The Tree of Life: **“...which is in the midst of the paradise of God.”** This is God's Kingdom in New Jerusalem. Is New Jerusalem paradise, or The Garden of Eden? Which is it? New Jerusalem is The New Garden of Eden. In

fact, it is a duplicate of God's Temple. You are going to be Priests and Kings – or The Bride, which dwells with her Husband.

COURT OF ISRAEL

Now, for The Court of Israel. Outside this Court, there is The Court of The Gentiles. The Groom is there along with The Bride, and The Gentiles. The Israelites are all there in New Jerusalem. But, unless they are written in that book, then they cannot come into that city – or The Temple of God. To enter New Jerusalem, one must experience a change of nature. God's Ten Commandments must be written in their hearts. Repentance will not be enough (Revelation 22:14).

I Corinthians 13:12 For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.

You are in New Jerusalem. God, The Father, is there with your Husband, Jesus Christ – at which time you can see God face-to-face. You are now putting another piece of the puzzle together.

Revelations 2:10 Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life.

They have a right to eat from The Tree of Life, and to live in New Jerusalem.

The Church in Smyrna is a Church that has gone through persecution – and had been tried. The only promise given is that they will have life, and they will be royalty. Verse 12 starts to tell them that the seed of Satan is there. Another key is that they are told that they are making a religion out of Christianity – instead of “a way of life.”

Revelation 2:14 But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumbling block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication.

All this was over money! Remember the wild ass that spoke? This is a group of people trying to make a business out of God's Church (John 2:16).

Revelation 2:17-18 ¹⁷He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it. ¹⁸And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira write; These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brass;

HIDDEN MANNAH

The hidden mannah refers to the fact that Christ says you must eat His Body. The white stone relates to you being a building block in New Jerusalem. The Book of Revelation has been written symbolically. In reality, New Jerusalem does not have a wall. The Wall is Salvation. God has no need for “walls.”

In the restoration, Jerusalem will be rebuilt during the time of Christ's reign for a thousand years. It will have no walls. God is “the protector” and “the defender.” These walls are only symbolic. This is purely a Spiritual Message. The Wall is The Bride who offers Salvation to her children. She is The Mother (Ephesians 2:20-21, Galatians 3:26).

Regarding The Church of Thyatira, God talks about His Seven Churches – and about the people following the ways of Jezebel (Easter and Christmas). But He still calls them His Church. Through the ages, many in God's Churches have been sinning continually, and following Satan's pagan ways. However, they will pay the penalty with many stripes.

Revelation 2:26-28 ²⁶And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations: ²⁷And he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers: even as I received of my Father. ²⁸And I will give him the morning star.

So, you will be “a ruler” over these other nations. In Revelation 22, The Morning Star is Jesus Christ.

Revelation 3:1 And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead.

Revelation 3:4-5 ⁴Thou hast a few names even in Sardis which have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy. ⁵He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.

Sardis isn't very diligent. You shouldn't run around deciding which church is God's Church. Those who have God's Spirit are in God's Church – and only God has made that decision.

TREE OF LIFE

Only a few become Christ's Bride. It is because these are going to be in New Jerusalem. It actually points to Christ. Christ is The Tree of Life (John 15:1-8). Those in Sardis, who remain faithful and overcome, will be in New Jerusalem. They will be in The Book of Life, as Christ's Bride and The Guests.

Revelation 3:7 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth;

Revelation 3:12 Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.

Now, you see the advantage of diligence: “¹²**Him that overcometh will I make a pillar [support] in the temple of my God....**” There is no Temple in New Jerusalem. God and Christ, His Son, are The Temple. And The Philadelphians who come into The Kingdom are part of the support of that Temple – which is God and Christ. That is why they are likened unto pillars.

The next step is: “**...he shall go no more out [that is where He will live]: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God.**” So those in The Philadelphia Elect are going to be supports of The Temple. They are not only The Wall [leaders], but they are, literally, “the support” for The Temple. They have a great responsibility.

PURPOSE OF THE WALL

Remember, THE PURPOSE OF THE WALL IS SALVATION. Spiritual growth continues on into God's Kingdom. That is the point.

Revelation 3:18 I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the same of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eye salve, that thou mayest see.

The Laodiceans are the ones who say they, only, have The Truth. Here is what Christ tells them: **“¹⁸I counsel thee to buy of me [what?] gold tried in the fire.”** They will be required to go into The Lake of Fire.

Anyone who runs around thinking they have all The Truth will burn. This is a major warning to everyone. No one has all of The Truth of God. Everyone needs to continue to grow. For those claiming to be the ones who have “The Only Truth” of God, Christ says: **“...buy of me gold tried in the fire.”**

STREETS OF GOLD

The streets of New Jerusalem's are made of gold. Remember gold can be refined. If you go into The Fire, your Life is refined, and you come out “gold,” being eternal, tried, and tested. I Corinthians 3 confirms: **“¹⁸...that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be**

clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eye salve, that thou mayest see.”

Now put this together. New Jerusalem in The New Heaven and New Earth is the most critical area. It is the place where God will dwell. His Elect will be The Bride who is going to marry His Son, and they are going to be busy growing Spiritually – and causing Salvation to happen.

All will be spending eternity discovering the riches in Christ and God, The Father. You will see God as He is. GOD IS “A CREATOR,” AND HE WILL CONTINUE TO CREATE ETERNALLY. So you, too, will create, because you are The Saved. This takes place as you continue to grow in the riches of Christ and God, The Father. The Righteous, who are The Saved, continue to produce The Fruit of Righteousness.

Proverbs 11:30 The fruit of the righteous is a tree of life; and he that winneth souls is wise.

The Tree of Life produces fruit every month – twelve fruits. What fruit is it? The answer is: “³⁰**The fruit of the righteous [what?] is a tree of life;**” So the fruit that is produced by The Tree of Life is Righteousness: “**...and he that winneth souls is wise.**” The Tree of Life is in New Jerusalem. You are then part of the Godly creative power of Righteousness.

I Corinthians 15:50 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

Only Spirit Beings can be in God's Kingdom. So it means those who are thrown into The Lake of Fire are changed into Spirit Beings. How much Truth they knew was not even a requirement. Those who are thrown into The Lake of Fire are those who refused to repent and follow God.

FRUITS OF RESTRICTED GROWTH

Some of these are Christians, who grew to a certain place and then were afraid or too lazy or too satisfied to grow further. They will go into The Lake of Fire. If you say, "I have all The Truth that I need, or I like what I am doing now," then you will burn (see: Luke 12:47).

I Corinthians 15:54-56 ⁵⁴So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. ⁵⁵O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? ⁵⁶The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law.

Since The Lord's hand is not short, what keeps God from saving more? Sin keeps God from hearing you and saving you. When these people become ashes, are they resurrected? They will not be resurrected, but rather, they are just changed into Spirit. This is because it says: "...**shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory.**"

Why is this? It is because there is no more death: **“⁵⁵O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? ⁵⁶The sting of death is sin....”** Sin was what held God back from saving you. But now, it is gone. This leaves the thought that: **“...the strength of sin is the law.”**

That is very plain and simple. The strength of sin is The Law. Also, you could say that The Law is the strength of sin. The Law is the gauge that tells you how bad or how sinful you are. This should make you repent – and when you do, God's Spirit can start to write His Laws in your hearts and minds. At this juncture, no one sins since death no longer exists. The Law no longer applies, so sin dies, and everyone is Saved.

Matthew 5:18 For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.

The Law stays as a means to reveal sin to the unrepentant: **“¹⁸...one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law till [when?] heaven and earth pass.”** Why does The Law stop? If everyone has repented, there is no need for The Law. From this point on, The Law is written in your heart or is being written in your heart.

THE MISSING INGREDIENT

One thing is missing in this paradise – this Garden of Eden. There is no Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. There is no Satan and no more testing. The time of trial is over. God makes all things new.

Revelation 19:7 Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready.

Revelation 19:9 And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.

The Fruit of Righteousness is The Tree of Life. ⁷“**Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him:**” This honor is not to Christ, but to God, The Father: “**...for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready.**” This is The Apostle John writing his letter to The Seven Churches.

By this time, John was an elderly man receiving this revelation. It was when nearly all The Churches were following Rome. Also, The Churches in Greece were following Constantinople.

Here is the message: ⁹“**...And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.**” You will not go into The Lake of Fire. You will live in New Jerusalem.

Revelation 21:1-6 ¹And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. ²And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from

God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. ³And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. ⁴And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorry, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. ⁵And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. ⁶And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely.

Read Revelation 21 carefully because it gets tricky. This statement about The New Heaven refers to God's Kingdom, The Abrahamic Covenant. There will be no more oceans. Can you imagine the landmass? Here is the city 1,500 miles in every direction and no oceans. Five-sixths of the earth today is filled with water, and one sixth with land.

Now reverse this scene. There are no oceans. One city is 1,500 miles square. This New Earth will be huge: **"²And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband."**

New Jerusalem is The Bride with a Groom, her Husband. Then a great voice said: **"...Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will**

dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. ⁴And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes....”

He will be there to straighten everything out. “...**there shall be no more death....**” Why is death gone? It is because there is no Law, no sin, and consequently, no death. You now are made of light and Spirit: “...**for the former things are passed away.**” The whole universe, according to the laws of physics, no longer exists.

LIVING IN A NEW DIMENSION

You will be living in a new dimension. It will be a new age, and it will be a new universe. The latest astronomers and scientists say there is a fifth dimension, and perhaps a sixth, seventh, and eighth dimension! In that light read: “⁵**And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new.**” Things keep getting newer and better – as growth continues unabated.

The Lake of Fire was an ending. The Garden of Eden was a beginning. The process of “making all things new” is a new beginning. In Isaiah, New Jerusalem is called Paradise – or The Garden of Eden. You will be starting off in God's Kingdom where Adam and Eve began.

Now the children who are outside The Garden of God (New Jerusalem), can grow Spiritually. Alpha and Omega is the beginning and end. Christ SAVED all who were lost from The Garden of Eden experience (Matthew 18:11). “**I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of water of**

life freely.” Spiritual growth takes place in The New Heaven and New Earth. God's original Sabbath rest comes to pass (Hebrews 4:9). Who remains to be given the water? God says: **“I make all things new.”** This is God's Rest. This is The Sabbath Rest that was lost.

BACK TO GENESIS

The New Heaven and New Earth is the genesis of when Adam and Eve sinned. This is a new beginning. Revelation 22 picks up the beginning when Adam and Eve are shown the exit from The Garden. It was a perfect creation that could have happened. The husband is Adam, and the first type of Christ was Adam, and Eve as his bride could have had their progeny in Paradise, as well.

The second Adam was Christ (I Corinthians 15). Under Adam, everybody ended up with death. With Christ everyone will end up with Life. What do you do in The Kingdom of God? You will create Salvation. Spiritual growth continues eternally. Everyone keeps growing. You will help people grow Spiritually. How many people need to grow Spiritually? There are billions and billions of individuals. But only a few, The Bride and The Guests, are Saved prior to the masses being Saved later (Matthew 7:13-14).

When you read about: **“...the fountain of the water of life...,”** did you wonder who should be Saved? If there is a New Heaven and a New Earth, then who needs a Tree of Life – or The Water of Life? All the Spirit Beings will continue to grow – so they will want and need The Water of Life.

In Proverbs, it states that Righteousness is like The Tree of Life. The only people who will be allowed to eat from The Tree of Life will be those who go into New Jerusalem. Only those who live in New Jerusalem are permitted to go in through the gates – and partake of The Tree of Life. Once Christians become The Bride of Christ ruling the nations of the world, then what remains to be done?

INFINITE GROWTH

You must keep growing in Righteousness. You must have agapè, God's nature. God, also, keeps growing. There will always be infinite growth. God keeps being "all and in all." God keeps creating and so does EVERYONE along with God. When God first began everything at the time of His Plan, there was nothing existing but God. Since then, God has been reproducing Himself.

Why is this? It is because that is the most He could ever give! So if He is reproducing Himself, then He is going to be "all and in all." God, Himself, is giving of Himself and keeps growing and expanding.

Deuteronomy 21:15-17 ¹⁵If a man have two wives, one beloved, and another hated, and they have born him children, both the beloved and the hated; and if the firstborn son be hers that was hated: ¹⁶Then it shall be, when he maketh his sons to inherit that which he hath, that he may not make the son of the beloved firstborn before the son of the hated, which is indeed the firstborn: ¹⁷But he shall acknowledge the son of the

hated for the firstborn, by giving him a double portion of all that he hath: for he is the beginning of his strength; the right of the firstborn is his.

The firstborn son is discussed here. He must be accepted as firstborn – even when he is from the wife who is not loved. Why was it proper for him to have two wives? He owned them. This is Satan's system of marriage. Christ came to Redeem you from Satan's system. How much are you supposed to give the firstborn? He receives twice as much as the rest of the family: **"...of all that he hath: for he is the beginning of his strength...."**

RIGHT OF THE FIRSTBORN

Why is The Word of God so important? Why is Jesus Christ so vital? It is because He is The Firstborn Son of God, and the beginning of all His strength. **"⁷...the right of the firstborn is his...."** Through Christ, you, also, inherit all things.

When God reproduces Himself through His Son, He is passing on His strength. Christ, who inherited all things, passes it on to His Bride, His Church. God is growing. Christ is growing. The Bride is growing. The Guests are growing. But who is left? These are the ones who are thrown into The Lake of Fire!

Revelation 21:7 He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.

It is very important to have a right to The Tree of Life in order to keep growing in Righteousness. When you overcome, you become God's son. God keeps reproducing Himself. It is all about family. Is it any wonder that Satan's biggest desire is to get rid of families?

Revelation 21:9-15 ⁹And there came unto me one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the Bride, the Lamb's wife. ¹⁰And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God. ¹¹Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal; ¹²And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel: ¹³On the east three gates; on the north three gates; on the south three gates; and on the west three gates. ¹⁴And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. ¹⁵And he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

A great mountain is going to be found near this great city. Perhaps, it will be seven mountains – just as in Jerusalem! The city is The Lamb's Wife.

Christ said that He would go to prepare a place for you. Everyone will love their homes because Christ will be the architect and decorator: **“¹¹ ...Having the glory of God....”**

Do you understand what that Glory is? The entire essence, the entire beauty, and the entire power of what God is, is found within the city itself. Movies have been made depicting The Emerald City – with its song: “Over the Rainbow” in The Wizard of Oz. This compares with: **“...Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone.”**

Jasper is a yellow-red color, so The Bride and her garment exudes this light yellow-red aura. Everyone will have a different look, but having the same DNA, there will be a family resemblance with the same essence. You will be composed of GOD'S GLORY, but all of you will have different arrangements from the various illuminating, precious stones.

GOD'S JEWELS

Malachi 3:17 And they shall be mine, saith the Lord of hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spareth his own son that serveth him.

God says He will make up **“¹⁷...my jewels...”** just as you feel your new baby is a precious jewel. In like manner, God sees you as His precious jewel. When the creation becomes Righteous with all the glory, everyone is going to be beautiful, but looking beautifully different.

Now, about the other elements of the city: **“¹¹...clear as crystal; ¹²And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel.”**

THROUGH THE GATES

The only way you can proceed into God's Kingdom is through The Gates which are called “praise.” Israel will now be praised. Israel was to be a witness so that other nations would see God's Glory. They almost got there in Solomon's time, but eventually failed. In the final analysis, all of Israel will be doing that job in the future. They will be the praise of The Kingdom.

Then there is the matter of the orientation of “The Gates:” **“¹³...On the east three gates; on the north three gates; on the south three gates; and on the west three gates. ¹⁴And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.”**

First, Christ is the chief cornerstone. Next, the foundation is comprised of The Twelve Apostles. Then there is The Wall of Salvation. Measurement comes next with: **“¹⁵...he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city....”** The Bride – The Church – is likened unto The Walls of Salvation. This is the mother of everyone (like Eve).

Revelation 21:18 And the building of the wall of it was

of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass.

Revelation shows Christ on His Throne who looks like jasper first of all. Then, The Bride looks like Christ, her Husband. When some people are married for years and years, they start looking like each other. This is no exception. So, the building of the wall was composed of jasper. When you first see the wall, it all looks the same. That is The Bride. And The Bride is Salvation. Her job is Salvation.

Galatians 4:22-26 ²²For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman. ²³But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh; but he of the freewoman was by promise. ²⁴Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar. ²⁵For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children. ²⁶But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.

This section of text is about a human attempt to have a child. But there was a problem: "...he of the freewoman was by promise [Abrahamic promise]. ²⁴Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants...." These two covenants are The Old and The New Covenant. This is the written Law of Moses.

SPIRIT OF THE LAW

The Spirit of The Law is written in your hearts: **“...the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage....”** In slavery, when they sinned, the people had to continually make offerings. The subject now points to Hagar: **“²⁵...For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and answereth to Jerusalem which now is [Paul's time] and is in bondage with her children....”**

These texts culminate in the statement: **²⁶...But Jerusalem which is above [New Jerusalem] is free, which is the mother of us all.** Eve was The Mother of all living. New Jerusalem – or that which comes down – is The Church, your Salvation. New Jerusalem is The Mother of everyone.

In The Kingdom of God, The Marriage takes place. This is The Feast, the so-called Jubilee Year. Then everyone is “released!” Those thrown into The Lake of Fire are released from death and sin. There is no more Law. When Law is gone, there is no sin. All will grow with the right heart. So now, you have The Husband, The Bride, and The Guests who have the job of bringing Salvation to others. Salvation is just the beginning.

LIFE IN THE GARDEN

What ended in The Garden will then continue. Everyone in The Garden will be dressing it and keeping it as God directs. The children of Cain need to grow Spiritually. They repented in The Lake of Fire, so they now need God's Law in their hearts (Revelation 22:14). They are outside of

The Garden and Eden. They are in The Land of Nod, just like Cain. The Kingdom of God is the process of Saving everyone. It is a new beginning. It is called The New Garden of Eden. It is The New Paradise.

Revelation 21:19:21 ¹⁹And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stone. The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire; the third, a chalcedony; the fourth, an emerald; ²⁰The fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, a topaz; the tenth, a chrysoprasus; the eleventh, a jacinth; the twelfth, an amethyst. ²¹And the twelve gates were twelve pearls; every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass.

The Twelve Apostles are “The Foundation.” Each stone has its own quality. It could be said: “The Wall is The Church and The Foundation, The Apostles.”

12 FOUNDATION COLORS

Now the stones and their colors: “...**the second, sapphire** [blue]; **the third, a chalcedony** [sky blue like the heavens]; **the fourth, an emerald** [green]; ²⁰**The fifth, sardonyx** [ruby red]; **the sixth, sardius** [a lighter red]; **the seventh, chrysolite** [a yellow gold]; **the eighth, beryl** [ocean green]; **the ninth, a topaz** [as a light green spring grass]; **the tenth, a chrysoprasus** [violet]; **the eleventh, a jacinth** [light red]; **the twelfth, an**

amethyst [purple]. Each foundation is for each Apostle, and has its own respective color.

This means that each and every one of you will look different. You will be made of the same substance as God, which is Spirit and fire radiating "light." But each will have separate garments, and a distinctive appearance.

Now to: "²¹...**the twelve gates....**" Israel is the witness. This is where you get: "...**twelve pearls....**" So The Israelites will look distinctly different. Israel is God's eternal witness of praise: "...**every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold [tested], as it were transparent glass**" (Revelation 22:1). Then: "...**he shewed me a pure river of water of life.**" What is this River called The Water of Life?

John 7:37-39 ³⁷In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. ³⁸He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. ³⁹(But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.

The Eighth Day is the greatest day of all, which is The Jubilee. This is God's Rest – The New Heaven and The New Earth. This is when God sets out to make sure that He Saves everyone. But each man must be in his own order. Today, no one can come to The Son except through The

Father. This text is about The Water of Life, which is God's Holy Spirit going out to all the nations.

Revelations 21:24 And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it.

What is this announcement all about? It concerns Spiritual growth. Notice especially that the nations will be Saved. Then the leaders of those nations – the kings – will bring an offering to The Lord.

Revelation 22:1-2 ¹And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. ²In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

The message of the pure waters flowing is related to God's Spirit – which comes from God. The firstborn represents the beginning of His strength. Then: **“²In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river was there.”**

Do you need a Tree of Life if you have Eternal Life? In Revelation 22:14, The Tree of Life continues your growth in Righteousness. So everyone will keep eating from The Tree of Life.

Christ explains that any person, who overcomes, has a right to eat of The Tree of Life. There are those who cannot eat from this Tree of Life, since they cannot come into the city. They do not obtain access to The Tree of Life in the city until they Spiritually grow to maturity.

LAST GREAT DAY

During The Last Great Day, everyone who wants to drink should come to this: **“²In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits....”** The number 12 delineates “divine government.” This passage is about Righteousness for God's government. New Fruit of Righteousness is available each of The Twelve Months.

People are in the city. These are people who have a right to go through The Gates, and whose names are in The Book of Life (the people who live in the city). They are the ones who are eating from The Tree of Life. Now The River of The Water is God's Holy Spirit going out into all nations.

The last few chapters of Ezekiel tell you about this great river coming out of Jerusalem – and when it first starts. At the beginning, it goes up to your ankles, and then your knees, and then to your thighs, and then to your hips, and pretty soon to your head. It gets so deep that it covers the whole earth. This passage is about God's Spirit.

John 15:1-4 ¹I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. ²Every branch in me that beareth not

fruit he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that is may bring forth more fruit.

³Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. ⁴Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

Christ said He was The True Vine. So what is The Tree of Life? It is Christ, who has: “...**fruit of itself...**” Then He declares that they must abide in Him. They abide in Christ, and The Bride keeps producing fruit. The Husband keeps producing fruit. The Father keeps producing fruit.

IDENTIFYING THE TREE

Remember Christ says: “...**You shall know a tree by its fruit...**” Good fruit cannot come from a bad tree. Bad fruit only comes from a bad tree. The Tree of Life is Christ. The water coming out of it is God's Spirit renewing the whole earth.

Revelation 22:2-6 ²In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. ³And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him: ⁴And they shall see his face; and his name shall be in their foreheads. ⁵and there shall be no night there; and they need no

candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever. ⁶And he said unto me, These sayings are faithful and true: and the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be done.

The fruit comes forth every month. This is important, because it shows they measure time in months. There is a certain continuity from the former world. Then: **“...the leaves of the tree were for the healing [restoring] of the nations.”** The nations, which are already Saved (or repentant), are restoring those who went through The Lake of Fire.

The leaves mean there is sprouting – and green leaves are growing. These are not old dried leaves. The leaves are a symbol of new growth that goes out to the nations through The River of Water or God's Spirit: **“³...And there shall be no more curse....”** They cannot be cursed any more because they have repented – so death is vanquished. The fire did the trick. But they have not grown Spiritually.

NEW JERUSALEM

New Jerusalem is married. She is the mother of everyone. Eve was the mother of all. Now, all nations will be blessed (Genesis 22, The Abrahamic Covenant) as the sands of the sea, and the stars of heaven.

Now, to an exciting time where it is said: **“...the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever.”** This is a rulership of

Salvation, making all things better. No one hurts anyone. Everyone performs good acts for everyone else: **“⁶...And he said unto me, These sayings are faithful and true: and the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be done....”** This is given as warnings to The Seven Churches.

Revelation 22:7-12 ⁷Behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecy of this book. ⁸And I John saw these things, and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel which shewed me these things. ⁹Then saith he unto me, See thou do it not: for I am thy fellowservant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: worship God. ¹⁰And he saith unto me, Seal not the sayings of the prophecy of this book: for the time is at hand. ¹¹He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still. ¹²And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.

This is the time of The Return of Christ. Do not seal the words of this prophecy, but rather proclaim it. This is within John's time frame. Of course, there will be problems like: **“¹¹...He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still....”**

Salvation has nothing to do with The Holy Days. They were just a shadow of things to come. So here is the major statement: **“¹²...And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.”**

Everyone concentrates on not being thrown into The Lake of Fire. They only want to be Saved. They do not realize they need to be like God. You must be an example of Christ as diligently as you can – because it will determine what you will be doing in The Kingdom. Salvation is free. The Gift of Life is free, but you have to earn what you will be doing in The Kingdom of God.

Revelation 22:13-17 ¹³I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. ¹⁴Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city. ¹⁵For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolators, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie. ¹⁶I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star. ¹⁷And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

“DOING” THE COMMANDMENTS

How do you “do” His Commandments? By having His Laws written in your hearts! You “do” The Commandments better than those written on stone. This is God’s righteousness – not yours. You will not covet anything. You won’t even think of coveting anything – because it would literally be against your nature. You would never think about stealing, because you wouldn’t want to harm your neighbor. You could not kill, because you love your neighbor. Are you keeping The Commandments?

What were the two requirements that Christ made for Eternal Life? As an example, remember what happened when the rich man came and said: “What must I do?” Christ said: “...keep The Commandments.” The rich man answered that he always kept The Commandments. Then he asked what he lacked? Jesus said: “Give your riches to the poor.” Sacrifice yourself, if you have love. Agapé – Love is what the rich man lacked.

Later, at the home of one of the chief tax collectors, came the same question. The tax collector, also, answered that he kept The Commandments and gave half of everything he earned to the poor. Christ told him that Salvation had come to his house. There were no Holy Days, no taking unleavened bread out of the house, no keeping Christmas, Easter, etc. When you keep The Commandments of God by nature, then you have “the right” to The Tree of Life – and you may enter in through The Gates to the city.

How do the people who are thrown into The Lake of Fire get into the city?

They get healed by having God's Laws written in their hearts and their minds – just as you have experienced.

IN OR OUT OF THE CITY?

So they cannot go into the city whether they are “left out” or “without.” Either they are “left out of the city” or “without the city.” They are completely out of the city. These beings cannot enter the city till they grow Spiritually. They are still in Cain's area, the land of wandering – which is The Land of Nod. The subject matter is all about who can go into the city.

So, whether they are “left out of the city” or “without the city,” its meaning is the same. They are not in the city. The context of the passage is about who has, and who doesn't have, a right to The Tree of Life: **“¹⁵...For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolators, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.”**

These are the children of Cain (or Satan), but they have repented. Then there is a shift to the here and now: **“¹⁶I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star.”**

Now, verse 17 jumps ahead. Notice that Christ is not mentioned here. **“¹⁷And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come.”** Christ said to drink freely on The Last Great Day: **“And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.”**

In other words, it is a call for all these people who repented in The Lake of Fire, and now they must grow Spiritually. God's Ten Commandments must be written in their hearts. The Bride of Christ (Salvation) will be helping these people along with God's Holy Spirit (River of Water). This is what God will have Christians do in His Kingdom.

Colossians 2:1-3 ¹For I would that ye knew what great conflict I have for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh; ²That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgment of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ; ³In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

So, for eternity, you will be busy learning more and more about what God has planned for you. Revelation 22 is just the beginning of The Kingdom. God is making all things new! There may be many more dimensions of the universe.

You, along with others in The Kingdom, will finish what Adam and Eve never started, let alone finished. The pieces are all coming together now. At this time, Eve's children must enter paradise. God's puzzle is solved with the simplest, yet most profound Gift you can give to one another. And it is THE GIFT, which God Himself planned for you to receive.

What unlocks all doors, and opens your hearts to The Glory of God? Love is the key. All must have God's love. The more God reveals His riches to

you, the more it will impact everyone. As your love for Him and His love for you grows, it allows you to experience a life rich with God's Glory.

Then, eventually everyone in the world will be Saved. They will grow in Spiritual abundance by discovering the riches in Christ. This is according to God's everlasting love for each and every one.

This is the magnificent Glory of God and His Gift to you. It is love that makes the world go round. GOD'S LOVE IS THE POWER AND THE ANSWER TO THE PUZZLE OF LIFE. HIS POWER WILL BE PURE AND IN ALL – WHEN EVERYONE'S HEART IS OPEN TO HIS SIMPLE, YET MOST MAJESTIC GIFT OF LOVE.

God's Puzzle Solved has been sent to over 30 countries and is in its 3rd printing. It is truly humbling to have received so many kind comments. Here are a few:

"Wow! I have just read your book. At first it hit me the wrong way, as many Christians teach differently, but after I read the whole book, I was very happy inside and out. I thank you all. I spent almost 30 years not knowing the whole truth, until I read your book. Now at age 40, I am very happy knowing the whole truth, and not just part of it. God has given you the whole truth – blessed are you."

"Just finished 'God's Puzzle Solved' it was very informative, very eye opening and a great read."

"Received 'God's Puzzle Solved' and am highly impressed with your gesture of providing a copy of your book without requesting or accepting any donations. I can only conclude that you are following the great commission of making disciples. My earnest prayers are offered for you in your ministry."

"Thanks so much for your book 'God's Puzzle Solved.' It is very easy to understand."

"I have received 'God's Puzzle Solved.' Now I can understand The Bible much better."

"I brought your book to my Bible Study group. Last week we began talking about Wisdom, Understanding and Knowledge. The first chapter in your book answered a lot of questions that had been raised. I can't wait to read your 2nd and 3rd book."

"Received 'God's Puzzle Solved' today and can't put it down."

"We are blessed to have a person like you in the world who is willing to share what he's learned through his own Bible study so that we may grow in The Word."

"Received 'God's Puzzle Solved.' I must say I have never read anything like this in my life. This is beautifully well written. I am seeing life differently as you show us in The Bible where it

interprets itself. People can tell you anything but to show you where it is and help explain it, is amazing.”

“You are truly blessed with the ability to put into words in one book when I have read hundreds of book about God and could not find.”

"Have only gotten to do cursor inspection, but God's Puzzle Solved looks like it will go a long way towards filling in the information needed to study God's word."

"I received your book 'God's Puzzle Solved.' I love what I have read. I have been tempted to take off work so I could keep reading. Thanks a million for writing it and making it freely available."

"Thanks so much for writing 'God's Puzzle Solved.' It has been a great help to me so far as answering questions I have had for a long time."

"My husband and I received our own copies of 'God's Puzzle Solved.' He is almost finished with it. He is in awe of it. He said he is learning so much more from you."

"With great respect I honor you for the wonderful book 'God's Puzzle Solved.' It is a great book and I love it very much."

"I just don't have words to express my gratitude and the impact 'God's Puzzle Solved' and your other books will have. I am sincerely grateful for your generosity. And thank you for the 6 extra books, I requested for the disabled veterans."

“Mr. Mokarow, my wife and I each have your book, she is reading it for the 3rd time and I am on my second. It's a wonderful book.”

"I'm not sure who requested the book 'God's Puzzle Solved,' although it's probably my recent Ex-wife. Thank you for sharing your wisdom and knowledge. From what I have read so far, this truly has God's hand in it. I pray that God's Will be done in all of your enjoyable

efforts and hard work."

"I just received your massive book. I am on disability and do not have a lot of money. I, like you, do believe that The Gospel should be free, but 'seldom' is in the 'church' of today. I do, however, believe that a laborer is worthy of his hire. Since God is a debtor to no man, I believe He will pay you in full for that you are giving in His Name. You have taken time to do a great work, given the thickness and the depth of content. I welcome it as a point of study for my daily walk with The Lord. I also wish to thank you for your commitment to spread The Word of God."

"When I first glanced at the book 'God's Puzzle Solved' my first thought was another Blue Code book. But as I began to read all I could think to myself was W.O.W. Wonderfully written, simple in it's eloquence, intelligent and moving. Obviously well researched and taught by The Holy Spirit. Presented to the reader, personally, from one brother in Christ to another. A definite work of love. You are welcoming each of us to find the hidden treasures of The Bible, but more importantly to recognize the reassures that await our discovery. Everyone must have this book in their personal study and reference library. From the beginning of God's plan through it's many emissaries, the law, salvation and understanding the nature of God, this book explains and endears The Word of God to the reader. I make no pretenses or apologies. I call them the way I see them. Additionally it is not my function or desire to share the limelight of your work. I just thought you might like to hear how an average reader responds to your wonderful writing style and the faith-filled pages of your book."

"Waiting for your second book 'God's Work,' it will be my treasure and pleasure."

"In today's world you don't find many people that give you something free concerning God or Jesus Christ. We pray for people like you every day. It comes from the heart and not how much money you have. I myself have had a lot of money and I have had nothing. But, I found if your heart is not right, the money is not

important. You're still not happy until you find Christ."

"I honestly appreciate 'God's Puzzle Solved' which you sent me. I look forward to sharing it with others."

"Please send a copy of 'God's Puzzle Solved' to my friend. I told him all about your book and how helpful and inspirational it has been in my life. He has as myself, never had the opportunity to take a look at what I consider The Truth of The Scriptures."

"Thank you for your book, it is refreshing to learn from a Christian who is not looking to profit from God's Word. Too many so called Christians have turned religion into a business. Christ did not want it to be like that. When others refer to catching away of the saints' as the rapture, they are misled by secular religion. I do not believe in pulling a few verses out of context to make a point. I also agree that none have been resurrected except Christ. My studies have been outside the influence of any church, because I could not find a church which taught the truth. So many questions nagged at me. Many Christians have been misled, and from reading your book, you asked yourself the same questions and a lot more. As you wrote God does not mislead, only Satan misleads Christians."

"From what I have read Art has clarified and simplified The Great Book. I've thought so many times that I will never be able to remember all I should about His Word; and that I would never reach a stable state which would be pleasing to Him. But, I've now learned that the main things are the plain things and it is extremely freeing to have a close personal relationship with Him without the dogma as a church organization."

"I've started reading 'God's Puzzle Solved' right away and immediately knew it is exactly what I need at this moment in my life. I appreciate your talent and your effort in spreading this message to the spiritual needy."

"Once I finish reading 'God's Puzzle Solved' and I still have some doubts that are not clarified in the book, I shall ask you."

“Received your book, and am especially impressed that you have requested no monies for this book. Not many ministries exist that would have this policy.”

“Most of my mail is basically bills, so it was quite refreshing to have a letter requesting that I NOT send any money. The world is blessed to have someone like you who puts so much time, effort and expense into books like these so that the rest of us may become closer to God.”

“You are mesmerizing. I have gone through your meticulous and marvelous book. Your book is, indeed, appreciated.”

“I am in The Church of God and I find your book the best one I have read on God's great love and gifts that He has given us.”

“I received your book from my cleaning lady. I am 80 years old. I got a lot of understanding from it.”

“I recently came by your book at a yard sale (God's Puzzle Solved). It was a blessing from God. Your work was easy enough for my seven-year old grandson!!! Reading your book was like sitting at the feet of Our Savior. It's the kind of book you want to read Over and Over... I saw things in The Scripture I have NEVER seen before. God Bless you for showing my heart and mind things of our Lord. If every home had this book, more people would be cutting off their T.V. and studying the Word of God.”

“Am impressed no charge for the books, no church affiliation or no religious denomination. Only God's Instructional Book – The Bible.”

“God's Puzzle Solved is a fantastic and interesting book. You are an amazing writer that places you in your own bracket. Whenever you have a new book, please send it to me!!!”